

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 69

### Majuu Girl - Shamoe

---

Hiiro was sleeping on his back, yet his body somehow felt heavy. Hiiro suddenly opened his eyelids. He was startled by the spectacle that appeared before him. He did not know when or who had mounted themselves on top of him. Hiiro attempted to raise his voice.

(Hiiro) “Wha...-!?”

However ~smack~ he was smacked on his mouth by that very someone’s hands.

(Hiiro) (why is this guy.....here!?)

He was shocked by who was there. Although he could not see who it was for a moment, he determined the person’s identity upon looking at their head, done up in twin tails. Yes, the person in question was the maid named Shamoe.

However, there was obviously a different atmosphere surrounding her compared to the time at dinner. Her previously pink hair was now stained in a pitch black darkness. Her eyes that seemed to faintly sag were now sharpened like a beast as they emitted a golden glow.

Furthermore, she possessed something that she clearly did not have during the dinner. This being a set of Kemonomimi and tail.

(Hiiro) (What the hell’s this guy trying to...-!?)

She looked at Hiiro with an expression that resembled a beast that had found its prey. She was looking down on him with a smile, licking her lips in delight. Hiiro found himself stunned at the changes that had occurred to her compared to the time at dinner.

(Hiiro) (I don’t really get what’s happening but for now-!)

He tried to grab her hands that were covering his mouth, it was only natural for a victim to struggle to break free. However, she had an iron grip on him. Hiiro could feel the pressure almost breaking his teeth

(Hiiro) (W-what kind of brute strength does she have!?)

Hiiro had no choice but to use his fist. However, she had reacted faster. Shamoe grabbed both of Hiiro’s hands and head butted him.

「がっ！？」

(Hiiro) “Ga-!?”

Hiiro began to see stars from the considerable impact. Following this, the maid began to strangle him with both hands.

「ぐ……が……はっ……っ！」  
“Gu……ga………Ha……-!”

She possessed tremendous force. If Hiiro had slackened his resistance even slightly, he would have been rendered unconscious instantly. As the situation would become really bad at the rate things were going, Hiiro invoked the previously installed “Protect” without particular regard for the consequences.

The characters he wrote on his arm appeared with a “powa” as it exhibited its effects. Pale blue magic appeared before Hiiro’s eyes.

バシンッ！  
(Bashin!)

Shamoe, noticing the magic, leaped backwards, away from the bed.

「ごほごほごほっ！」  
“Gohogoho-!”

While Hiiro had one eye closed, he coughed as he rubbed his neck.

「グルルルルル！」  
“Gururururu” Shamoe growls at Hiiro.

As if she were a famished beast, Shamoe growled as she slowly prowled around the room on all fours. She appeared to be searching for an opportunity to pounce on her target. Actually, that’s exactly what she was doing. Her eyes were glaring at Hiiro, filled with killing intent.

(Hiiro) (...if I don’t take this seriously, this could get pretty dangerous…….)

Immediately jumping out of the bed, Hiiro grabbed the “Piercer Sword” that was leaning against the bedside. Although Hiiro was wary of the opponent, Shamoe seemed to maintain a constant distance as she kept glaring at him with sharp eyes.

(Hiiro) (This fellow seems to have a good intuition. She seems to be extremely wary of this magic barrier.)

The word magic “protect” would still remain active for a little longer. After receiving such a mysterious attack, Shamoe deemed that it was worthless to draw closer at this particular time, seemingly basing it on pure animalistic instincts.

As the standoff continued for a while, Hiiro used that opportunity to once again install the word “Protect” onto his arm. The instant Hiiro finished writing, the magic barrier that had been protecting him up until now disappeared.

In that instance, the maid’s eyes flashed as she forcefully kicked the floor, launching herself towards Hiiro. While gritting his teeth, Hiiro took a stance as he prepared to swing his sword. However, in that moment...

「お待ち下さいませっ！」

“Please wait!!” (???)

Suddenly, the door burst open as Silva stood in the doorway shouting. Hiiro’s hands involuntarily paused. As Hiiro’s resolve to attack faltered at Silva’s words, he was utterly unable to avoid the approaching Shamoe’s assault, his left shoulder being bitten as a consequence.

“Gu-a!” (Hiiro)

His face distorted due to excruciating pain.

“Gu..... t-this fucking-!” (Hiiro)

As he was being bitten, Hiiro activated the previously installed character, “Speed” and began to fly forward with full force. Naturally, they moved with tremendous velocity.

\*baki-!\*

“Kyan-!”

Shamoe, whose back collided with the wall at full force, involuntarily spat out salivation before collapsing directly onto the ground.

Hiiro used the word “Speed” in order to accelerate towards the wall. As Shamoe collided with the wall, Hiiro shoved the hilt of his katana into her stomach, inflicting some damage. It was obvious that the damage dealt was significant as her legs buckled and she tumbled to the floor.

Following this, her hair that was black returned to the same shade of pink that Hiiro noticed during their first meeting. Her Kemonomimi and tail also retracted.

“Haa, haa, haa.....”

Hiiro staggered as he held his wounded arm.

“Hiiro-sama!” (Silva)

Silva supported Hiiro from behind with both hands.

“Ku.....Y-you better explain this, Jii-san.” (Hiiro)

As Silva made an apologetic expression, he returned a faint nod. Yet, the remaining resident of the mansion began to speak.

“Let me take care of the explanations.” (???)

It was Liliyn. Wearing black negligee, she was carrying a plush teddy bear by the hand, the plush's neck having cotton spilling out of it. Although she wore a sleepy expression, after taking a glance at the unconscious Shamoe collapsed on the floor, she moodily grunted.

“Silva, go carry Shamoe off to her room. After that, begin treating the boy.” (Liliyn)

“As you command.” (Silva)

Quietly responding thus, Silva let go of Hiiro as he carried Shamoe off to her room. Following this, Liliyn turned on the lights as she drew close to the sofa.

“Now then, for the mean time sit down. I have a lot of explaining to do. Not to mention, I also have some things that I want to ask.” (Liliyn)

Her current expression was unlike the suspicious smile she wore during dinner. Her eyes were narrowed and her mouth was slightly pointed in seriousness.

Hiiro similarly sat down on the sofa while suppressing the pain. As it was just the two of them, he sat down so that they could converse face to face.

In that moment, Silva returned with, what seemed like, a first aid kit. In reality, he did not need to be treated. If he used the word “Healing” then Hiiro's wound would be neatly cured. Yet, as he could not afford to use his magic here, he had no choice but to accept the treatment.

As Hiiro was being bandaged by Silva, Liliyn began to speak once the treatment was over.

“I'll say this first. I apologize on behalf of our kin.” (Liliyn)

Hiiro thought this was slightly surprising. Ever since he met her, he thought that she was the type who would never offer apologies. As such, Hiiro could now determine that she was civilised, even if only slightly.

“Never mind that, just give me an explanation. Why the hell did she come here and attack me? Not to mention, her appearance.....” (Hiiro)

“Umu. Well, no need to rush. This was entirely caused by our carelessness. However, I’ll still explain it to you.” (Liliyn)

As she said thus, Silva, who had disappeared undetected, seemed to have gone to prepare tea as he returned and set down some tea in front of the two.

Liliyn took the tea with one hand, taking a sip before exhaling. Following this, she began to softly speak.

“I’m assuming that you already know that this place is the Demon World.” (Liliyn)

It seems that the [Evila] call their own world the Demon World, the [Gabranth] call theirs the Beast World, and the [Humas] the Human World.

“Although those living on this continent are mainly [Evila], there are some other races that secretly make their homes here.”

This was not a particularly unusual story. There were some Gabranths who lived on the Human Continent and vice versa. As the Demon World had harsh environments and strong monsters, it seemed more likely that other races living on this continent were rare.

“As you can guess from the flow of the conversation, Shamoe isn’t an [Evila]. Actually, in hindsight, perhaps saying that she’s not a pure blood might be better.” (Liliyn)

“Pure?” (Hiiro)

As he picked up an intriguing word, Hiiro echoed.

“Shamoe is a crossbreed between an [Evila] and a [Gabranth], she’s an abandoned child.” (Liliyn)

“……so she’s a half?” (Hiiro)

“Yeah. If we were to classify her, she’s of the Majuu (Demon Beast) race.” (Liliyn)

As Hiiro contemplated about the existence of such a race, as it had explained Shamoe’s Kemonomimi and tail, he somehow accepted it.

“But when I first met her, she didn’t have Kemonomimi or a tail, right?” (Hiiro)

Yes. If he was to say one or the other, she had the appearance of a normal person.

“Among the race known as the [Majuu], they can be split into 2 types: those with strong [Evila] blood and those with prevalent [Gabranth] blood. Shamoe is of the [Evila] group, thus she normally doesn't have Kemonomimi.” (Liliyn)

“I see. So? The reason why it suddenly grew is?” (Hiiro)

“We were careless. Tonight is the night of a full moon.” (Liliyn)

“Ah?” (Hiiro)

As Liliyn peered out the window, Hiiro followed suit. What he observed was certainly a full moon floating in the night sky. Its size was incomparable to Japan's moon as it was magnitudes larger.

“On nights of the full moon, it seems that the [Gabranth] blood strengthens. But don't misunderstand? Not all [Majuus] run wild like Shamoe. There are fellows who don't lose to either blood line, to the point that they can control it completely.” (Liliyn)

In other words, Shamoe was simply still immature. It seems that there are [Majuus] who have matured and have a full understanding of their bodies, thus being capable of controlling their blood. However, as Shamoe has not yet become an adult, she does not possess the mental strength capable of preventing herself from going wild.

“Although lately, it seems that she was able to control her urges. Perhaps because a lot happened today, her heart was uneasy.” (Liliyn)

“My condolences.” (Silva)

Silva lowered his head apologetically. It seemed that today was the very first time she had to serve a guest. In addition, as Silva, who she was constantly worried about, had finally returned from the toxic mountain, she seemed to be extremely distressed.

As her heart's stability had been impaired, she was unable to suppress her instincts, unlike usual, which led to her assaulting Hiiro due to her going out of control.

“But still, why did she come to my room? You guys have also been attacked, right?” (Hiiro)

“Yeah. Certainly, it's as you say. The one who's on the receiving end of these attacks is usually me, you know.” (Liliyn)

“Well, if I would rather enjoy I were the target of her assaults.” (Silva)

“Shut it, pervert!” (Liliyn)

“Gibyo-!” (Silva)

Receiving a magnificent hook, Silva flew towards the bed. No matter where he was, Silva would remain Silva.

“Her [Gabranth] instincts are stronger than most. It often reacts to dangerous people. Thus out of those in this mansion, Shamoe’s target was basically me.” (Liliyn)

Come to think of it, Silva indicated that Liliyn’s strength was on the level of making a dragon cry and beg. If this was true, then it was understandable that she would trigger the Gabranth’s instincts.

“But today.....a strange event happened.” (Liliyn)

Saying thus, Liliyn narrowed her eyes.

“Who Shamoe deemed as being dangerous was not me, but you.” (Liliyn)

It suddenly occurred to Hiiro. It was certainly as Liliyn had indicated. Shamoe’s instincts had judged Hiiro to be of a greater threat than Liliyn.

“Certainly, there’s many mysterious things about you. Even though you’re not of the [Imp Race], you have their appearance. In addition, there’s the previous struggle with Shamoe.” (Liliyn)

Thinking that he had been seen, Hiiro began tightly grinding his back teeth.

“You, I heard from Silva that you were a fire-user, yet I there were no signs of flames. In spite of this, there’s still the presence of magic being used.” (Liliyn)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“Not to mention, those last movements. It felt like your power spiked for a brief moment. During that time, your arm also emitted a faint glow.” (Liliyn)

As she said thus, Liliyn pointed towards Hiiro’s arm.

“Instead of me, Shamoe’s deemed you more dangerous. Her instincts thought such to the extent of trying to kill you. That has not occurred even to me.” (Liliyn)

She sounded a little angry. As she thought that Shamoe had chosen Hiiro over her, she displayed slight jealousy. However, it seemed that she was even more shocked when she witnessed Hiiro’s [Word Magic].

“I’ll ask again, boy. Who in the hell are you?” (Liliyn)

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 70

### Little Girl - Strong? Weak?

---

This time she did not ask out of curiosity but out of wariness. Hihiro gulps and focuses his gaze towards her.

(Trying to fool her... might be dangerous) (Hihiro)

He felt that this time she might force an answer out of him. He was not at fault this time around, but to them there is no doubt that his existence is far too strange.

Also, for some reason or another, there was something else that was bugging him. He decided that until he knew what that was, he wouldn't reveal anything about himself to them.

Before that, however, it was necessary to prepare some insurance for himself. Thinking that, Hihiro puts on a sharp expression and...

“You can't even properly discipline your own servants. I can't believe it” (Hihiro)

“What did you say...?” (Liliyn)

Just like he expected, Liliyn knits her brow with an unpleasant expression on her face as she glares at Hihiro.

“To think you'd express your hospitality towards a guest with this kind of poor behavior. I'm at a loss for words” (Hihiro)

“M-Muu1...” (Liliyn)

What Hihiro was saying was correct, and Liliyn couldn't retort.

“And on top of that, you demand I identify myself? Are you sleep talking, oi2?” (Hihiro)

Hihiro and Liliyn were glaring at each other and Silva, who was standing nearby, had a complicated expression on his face.

“Giving me some half-hearted apology. If you're going to apologize, how about you show me some sincerity” (Hihiro)

“Ku3...” (Liliyn)

Even though she was at fault, Liliyn began to get irritated being told off so much by the rude and younger Hihiro.

Hihiro stared at that girl, as if observing her. Then suddenly, Hihiro gets up and moves to the corner of the room, distancing himself from the two.

Not knowing what was going on, Liliyn holds her breath and follows Hiiro with her eyes. Ignoring her gaze, Hiiro concentrates magic into his fingertip. Obviously taking note of his actions, the glint in Liliyn's eyes grow stronger and Silva immediately stands in front of her as if to shield her.

(Oh, this went rather well) (Hiiro)

Smiling internally, he begins writing a word while making sure they can't see it. The word he wrote was [Transfer]. With this, it became possible for him to escape at any time.

In truth, his actions were a gamble. It would have been dangerous if they had assaulted him as soon as they sensed his magic. That is because he does not understand how strong Silva and Liliyn are. No, Liliyn is strong without a doubt. She carries an atmosphere similar to that Rarashik. If they fought head on, Hiiro would have no chance of victory.

That is why Hiiro was extremely nervous while he was writing that word. Only he himself knows how relieved he was after he had finished writing it.

(Now, I've got my insurance. Next is...) (Hiiro)

Hiiro wanted to ask about what was on his mind earlier. He shifts his gaze towards the two who are watching him make as little effort as possible.

“Oi, isn't there something you should be saying?” (Hiiro)

If she didn't he would act according to the plan that he just came up with. His plan is that if they still emit hostility towards him and refuse to talk he will use [Transfer], go to where Mikazuki is, then escape from the island.

It seems that outside there are many monsters around Rank S loitering around, but Hiiro decided that would be much safer than staying here. Hiiro puts himself on guard while observing the two. And then...

“Nofofo, it is exactly as you say” (Silva)

With a faint smile, Silva gets out of his battle stance and lightly bows.

“O-Oi Silva...” (Liliyn)

Watching his actions just now, even Liliyn's eyes became dots<sup>4</sup>.

“Ojou-sama<sup>5</sup>, everything that Hiiro-sama<sup>6</sup> has said is true” (Silva)

“Ha<sup>7</sup>?” (Liliyn)

“That individual is our guest. He is also the benefactor who saved my life. Return favor with favor, and return life with life. It would not do to forget that” (Silva)

“...” (Liliyn)

“We invited him into this mansion, then we did something to test him, and after that a servant of the mansion wounded him. Considering all of that, for us to behave in such a manner, it would do no good for Ojou-sama’s future nor Ojou-sama’s ambition” (Silva)

“...” (Liliyn)

“Ojou-sama, I believe you know what it is that you must do” (Silva)

Liliyn became silent for a while after listening to Silva’s words. Hiiro stared at Liliyn without changing expression, but suddenly had a look of shock on his face.

As for why...

“Uu...” (Liliyn)

Liliyn’s eyes were teary.

(Eh? ...Ha? She’s crying?) (Hiiro)

Even Hiiro had not expected this situation and was taken aback.

It hadn’t gotten to the point where she was shedding tears but she had the look of an upset child that was trying to hold it back, and...

“S-Shwut up! I know!” (Liliyn)

She throws the doll in her hand towards Silva with a \*dosu\*8 and sharply turns towards Hiiro.

“I’m sowwy! I was wrong! Forgib me!” (Liliyn)

She doesn’t bow her head, but looking at her pouting and her semi-desperate apology, she seemed to have lost all sense of maliciousness.

(W-What’s with her... It’s almost as if...) (Hiiro)

“Nofofofofo! You are like a small child, crying in such a manner” (Silva)

Silva said what Hiiro wanted to say.

A fist sank into his gut \*dosu\* and Silva groaned and crumpled to the floor.

But looking at her, Hiiro thought she really was like a child. He had heard that she has lived a long life. By Silva’s manner of speaking, it seems to be true.

However she didn’t get what she wanted, moreover she was scolded by one of her servants. The girl ended up showing an emotional side that didn’t match her age.

Looking at her, feelings of shame starting to build within Hiiro for fearing and being defensive against such a girl.

Though she is much older than he is, it seems like she is still a child. She demands someone to tell her something because she wants to know, and she becomes emotional because someone scolds her. That kind of child.

(Oi oi, what about my resolution up until now...) (Hiiro)

He became less tense and his set word almost faded, so he hurriedly concentrates on it again. If he were to let it disappear without activating it, he would suffer a <<Rebound>> and for six hours he would be weakened and unable to use <<Word Magic>>. He definitely did not want that to happen.

However, he thought with this he'd be able to ask about what was on his mind earlier, so he begins to talk.

“Can I have a moment?” (Hiiro)

“W-What is it!” (Liliyn)

She looks at him with slightly inflamed eyes. He isn't scared of her at all anymore. If anything, right now the atmosphere around her would make most people want to pat her on the head and make her feel safe.

“Haa9, well, what. I've accepted your apology for now, so about the topic from before...” (Hiiro)

“Are you going to tell me!?” (Liliyn)

She didn't suddenly change expression, but she spoke with a smile on her face. Seeing that, Hiiro made a bitter smile and...

“...Before that, tell me one thing” (Hiiro)

“Mu...” (Liliyn)

She knits her brow with an unpleasant expression, as if to say “you have more you want to say?”.

“Ojou-sama” (Silva)

Silva, who had suddenly resurrected, spoke out to calm Liliyn. She sighs and waves her hand.

“Okay okay, I understand. However, after I answer your question you will tell me about yourself, right?” (Liliyn)

She glares at Hiiro with a look that could kill.

It may have been because he had seen her crying just now, but Hiiro does not feel intimidated at all. He could only see it as a child putting on airs.

“That depends on how you answer my question” (Hiiro)

“...Fun10, very well. Unlike others, I am open-minded. I will let you ask your question first” (Liliyn)

Liliyn says so pompously, and Silva apologetically bows his head.

“Then, my question. Akachibi11, do you...” (Hiiro)

“Wait” (Liliyn)

“What is it?” (Hiiro)

“W-What did you say just now?” (Liliyn)

“Ha?” (Hiiro)

“W-What do y-you mean by A-Aka-Akachibi?” (Liliyn)

Silva, who is standing next to her, is dripping sweat like a waterfall. He is panicking because it seems like all Hell will break loose.

“Of course I’m referring to you. You have red hair and you’re a pipsqueak, therefore Akachibi” (Hiiro)

“Hohou12... It seems like you want me to pulverize you into pulp...” (Liliyn)

One can sense an odd aura rumbling behind her \*gogogogogogo\*13, but the only one that notices it and breaking into a cold sweat is Silva.

“What, you don’t like it?” (Hiiro)

“Of course I don’t! Just who do you think I am!?” (Liliyn)

“A crybaby brat” (Hiiro)

“Ugu14... Y-You...” (Liliyn)

Liliyn’s face turns red and her eyes are full of rage.

“You hate it that much? Then how about Akaloli15?” (Hiiro)

“Ha? Hm? What did you say? ‘Akaloli’? What is ‘Akaloli’, Silva?” (Liliyn)

“Huh? H-Ha! Um, that is... Err, Akaloli is...” (Silva)

In his heart he believes that it most likely refers to a red lolita, but he doesn’t put it into words. Not knowing what to do, he desperately shifts his train of thought 180 degrees and thinks deeply.

“Mumumu, yes! It’s that! ‘Akaloli’ is a compliment, Ojou-sama!” (Silva)

“Mu? I-Is that so?” (Liliyn)

“Y-Yes! According to rumors, ‘Akaloli’ is a name granted to sweet, beautiful ladies!”  
(Silva)

“Hou, such a word is becoming popular outside, is it” (Liliyn)

She nods in understanding. Hiiro stares at those two with a blank look on his face.

“T-Therefore, would it not be good to accept it?” (Silva)

“M-Muu... Is that so...” (Liliyn)

There is not such word as Akaloli. Why? Because Hiiro just made it up on the spot. It is also not a compliment. It was nothing more than an easy nickname for him to remember. Liliyn, ignorant of the ways of the world, had no way of knowing that.

“Umu16, then I shall allow you to call me Akaloli! Because I am tolerant! Ahahahaha!”  
(Liliyn)

“I-Isn’t that nice! Nofofofof!” (Silva)

Silva could not help but think that he was glad Liliyn was so simple.

“Oi, can I ask already?” (Hiiro)

“Mu? It’s fine, go ahead and speak” (Liliyn)

Hiiro feels relieved finally being able to return to the main topic.

“...Question. Are you the type that concerns yourself with and discriminates based on race?” (Hiiro)

“Ha? What nonsense are you saying” (Liliyn)

Hiiro remains quiet and looks into her eyes. Liliyn receives his gaze and makes a serious expression.

“Fun, race doesn’t matter. I just like the strong. If there is any discrimination, it would be based only on strength and weakness, kozou17” (Liliyn)

Suddenly a cunning expression full of experience could be seen on her small face. Hiiro understood that as the answer she came to, which she could state with confidence. He couldn’t believe this was the same girl that was teary due to getting scolded earlier.

“...I see” (Hiiro)

It wasn’t anything difficult. She was just a person that either had an interest in someone or didn’t, and whether that person was strong or not. She was a person that made decisions based only on that.

Silva looks at her with a gentle expression. It seems like an expression one would have looking at his own daughter. Hiiro thought that it would be nice if he always acted like a regular adult but also thought it was extremely unfortunate that Silva had a tendency to suddenly transform into a pervert.

(They're a bit different from Ossan18 and Muir, but it feels like it'd be fine to speak a little with these people. However, I'll have to have them promise first) (Hiiro)

Thinking that, Hiiro places his hand on the bandages Silva wrapped.

“Oi, before I tell you about myself, promise me that you won't tell anyone” (Hiiro)

“Don't look down on me. Do I look like that kind of loose-lipped woman, you insolent peasant!” (Liliyn)

“Nofofofofo! If Hiiro-sama demands it, I will take it with me to my grave” (Silva)

“...I got it” (Hiiro)

Hiiro slowly cuts off the bandages. The other two look at him with a confused expression on their faces.

“W-What are you-” (Liliyn)

“Shut up and watch” (Hiiro)

\*Pishun!\*19

Hiiro disappeared in an instant and Liliyn and Silva's eyes were wide in surprise.

“Where are you looking?” (Hiiro)

The two gasp and look towards the direction his voice came from. For some reason Hiiro, who was standing in the corner of the room just now, was sitting on the sofa.

(This should be enough, but I may as well fix this while I'm at it. Their surprised faces are fun to look at too) (Hiiro)

Putting aside those two and looking at his shoulder which was still bleeding, Hiiro once again concentrates magic into his fingertips.

(If it's a wound of this level I won't need two characters... No, before that...) (Hiiro)

He writes some word into his arm. That word, however, seemed to be a trigger word and disappeared as if it were absorbed.

Afterwards, he writes [Heal] and activates it on his shoulder. The bite marks on his flesh slowly start to fade and returns to its normal state

Liliyn and Silva watched the scene in front of them frozen in surprise, as if time had stopped. Liliyn gasps and brings her hand to her chin with a deep look on her face and begins muttering.

“Healing magic...? No, healing magic is light attribute magic. There is no way Evila can use it. I can’t feel the power of light either. And that movement technique just now... What does it mean?” (Liliyn)

As she was muttering, Hiiro’s wound completely healed. Liliyn speaks to him with her hand still on her chin.

“Explain. What... was that just now?” (Liliyn)

“Even if you ask me ‘what’, it was my magic” (Hiiro)

“...I mean, why does an Evila have... no, wait. I see. You, that’s a Unique magic, isn’t it?” (Liliyn)

Silva, as if he had already realized, looks towards Hiiro and lightly nods.

“Aah<sup>20</sup>, that’s right. It’s called <<Word Magic>>. I can’t explain it in detail, but it’s omnipotence is its selling point” (Hiiro)

“Explain it to me” (Liliyn)

“I refuse. I don’t have any obligation to tell you any more. Even this much is a great service” (Hiiro)

“Mu, you...” (Liliyn)

Liliyn looks at him with a face obviously full of rage. Hiiro, however, ignores her and answers.

“Do you blab about your abilities to strangers? I only told you this much because I felt like it. I won’t tell you anything about my power beyond this. That’s normal, isn’t it?” (Hiiro)

“Mu...” (Liliyn)

Possibly because she realized that Hiiro’s decision was correct her rage lessened, but apparently still wanting to hear an explanation she looks at him with impatience in her eyes. He can understand her curiosity, but he didn’t plan on saying anything further.

In fact, he had only planned to speak up until that point. He had thought that if Liliyn was the type that was concerned over race he would just teleport and leave.

Like the Gabranth that sought war, if she was the type that thought her race was superior and had thoughts of destroying the other races there would definitely be conflict if he were to stay with them.

The result, however, was that Liliyn had no interest in races. She only thought of strong and weak. It's simple, but it is an easy-to-understand answer, one which may give a favorable impression.

This is what Hihiro had wanted to know after hearing about Liliyn from Silva. He wanted to know her way of thinking and wanted to ask her while he was here.

“In other words, your magic is a Unique magic. You can create fire, you can increase your physical capabilities, and you can even heal. In that case... I see, that appearance too?” (Liliyn)

“Who knows?” (Hihiro)

“There's nothing wrong with answering that much” (Liliyn)

“I already told you, I'm not an [Imp]. That should be enough, right?” (Hihiro)

“M... Mu” (Liliyn)

Liliyn looks up at Hihiro while pouting. Unlike before, she looks like a child that just got her toy taken away from her, causing Hihiro to unconsciously feel less serious.

“Nofofofofo! I did not believe you to be an average person, but to think you were a user of Unique magic! Nofofofofo!” (Silva)

“Eei21 shut up, Silva! Aah, I want to know! I'll use force to-” (Liliyn)

“That is no good, Ojou-sama. He is our guest. We have also caused him quite a bit of trouble” (Silva)

“Mu...” (Liliyn)

Liliyn can't retort to Silva's reasoning.

“Isn't it fine! This place is occupied by odd and eccentric people. Isn't that what you always say, Ojou-sama? Isn't it useless to inquire about every stranger you meet?” (Silva)

“That's true, but... Mu” (Liliyn)

However, it seems like she can't help but be interested in someone as odd as Hihiro. She stares at him while biting her nails.

At that moment, Hihiro was smiling on the inside.

(Alright, seems like it went well) (Hihiro)

From his point of view, he could see something about Liliyn and Silva. It was their <<Status>>.

When he used [Heal] he immediately activated [Pry] which he had set beforehand. He couldn't find an opening to use it during the meal, however he used the opportunity earlier to activate both words. That way they wouldn't doubt him when he used [Pry].

On another note, when he activated the two character word the words that he had set previously disappeared, but this was the word that he had set prior to activating [Heal]. It was so that they wouldn't sense anything odd when he activated it.

Liliyn Li Reysis Redrose

Lv: 148

HP: 6733/6733

MP: 5876/5876

EXP: 2796139

NEXT: 98022

ATK: 977

DEF: 944

AGL: 1159

HIT: 1220

INT: 1476

<<Magic Attribute>> : None

<<Magic>>: Dream Illusion Magic (Dream Eater, Bewitching Confinement, Ethereal Construction)

<Titles>>: One Who Lives Among Illusions | Little Girl | Crybaby | Connoisseur of Wine | Seeker | Manipulator | Monster Slayer | Killer of the Unique | Demon Who Shreds | Transcendent | Permanence Devil | Redrose Witch | One Who Seeks the Strong | An Unusual Person

Silva Plutis

Lv: 80

HP: 1250/1250

MP: 6000/6000

EXP: 604441

NEXT: 23000

ATK: 430

DEF: 355

AGL: 490

HIT: 333

INT: 1000

<<Magic Attribute>> : Dark

<<Magic>>: Pool Ball (Dark - Attack) | Dark Gate (Dark - Movement) | Black Out (Dark - Attack) | Fear Cremation (Dark - Attack) | Shadow Create (Dark)

<Titles>>: Spirit of Darkness | Tribe That Sees | Heretic | Perverted Butler | Immortal Lolicon | Playboy | Feminist | Old Man of Sexual Harassment | The Enemy? Ally? of Women | Sage | Omnipotent | Pacifist | Faithful | White-Haired Demon | The Strongest Shield

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 71

### The Little Girl's Invitation

---

(There's plenty that I want to retort, but why are the little girls of this world so strong...?)

Rarashik, who he had scanned a while ago, had also crossed level 100. And the little girl in front of him had god-class strength. What's more...

(And her having no attribute means she uses a unique magic like me...)

She was the first unique magic user he had ever met, apart from himself. He had no idea just how powerful 《Phantasm Magic》 was, but according to Arnold, every unique magic was extremely powerful. Her magic probably held something that allowed her to overwhelm her opponents.

(And that Silva is... a 『Spirit of Darkness』 ?)

Seeing the words on his list of titles made Hiiro hold his breath. He was able to take on the parasitizing cactus' s poison without batting an eye, so Hiiro knew he was no ordinary person. But according to his title, he was one of the 『Spirits』 .

I never thought he would be a Spirit. That' s actually more surprising than the unique magic. His appearance is that of your average, everyday old man, but he wasn' t an 『Evila』 , or a 『Humas』 . He was a 『Pheom』 .

(A user of unique magic, a 『Evila』 and 『Gabranth』 cross, and a 『Pheom』 . What the hell is up with this mansion...)

Silva did say that this was the dwelling of eccentric people, but it seems he wasn't exaggerating. What's more, Hiiro himself was an otherworlder with unique magic; a person fitting of the place. The mansion was full to the brim of surprises.

But looking at the two' s 《Status》 was a big help. Though he was a little shocked, having information would make his life easier. If they were to ever have to fight, he would be able to come up with countermeasures more easily.

Of course, he would lose if he attacked head-on, but there were plenty of approaches he could take with the information he gained. As he was thinking along those lines, Liliyn speak.

“Well, there is some sense in what you're saying.” (Liliyn)

“That’s correct. Hiiro-sama is, to put it briefly, someone who is very similar to us.”  
(Silva)

“Fumu.” (Liliyn)

Lilyn turned her eyes to Hiiro once more, and began observing him. And after watching him for a while, she nodded lightly, and broke out in a smile.

When was Hiiro questioned her actions mentally, Liliyn suddenly thrust her finger at me, and spoke words he hadn’t expected.

“Okay, brat. Become mine.” (Liliyn)

The sudden turn of events put even Hiiro in shock. Silva shrugged his shoulders, and sighed.

“What are you saying? Of course, I won’t. I refuse.” (Hiiro)

“I refuse your refusal!” (Liliyn)

“… What?” (Hiiro)

She said it proudly, while sticking out her chest.

(This brat, what is she trying to do? Did she hit her head somewhere?)

“I’m perfectly sane, you fool.” (Liliyn)

“…Hm? Ah…” (Hiiro)

It seems that he had unintentionally spoken the words from his heart. Because of the sudden invitation, his mind was in a bit of disorder.

“According to Silva, you are on a journey. Put an end to that, and come serve me.”  
(Liliyn)

“Hell no, brat.” (Hiiro)

“What do you mean by brat! Even though I look like this, I’ve lived several hundred years, boy!” (Liliyn)

As Hiiro had guessed, her age far exceeded her appearance. Even so, as with Rarashik, having a little girl look down on him really pissed him off.

“Then granny.” (Hiiro)

“Say another word, and you’ll be seeing a nightmare you’ll never wake up from.”  
(Liliyn)

She began letting out a serious amount of killing intent. It seems that it would be difficult for an ordinary person to even stand in the face of it. Hiiro felt sweat gradually gathering on his back.

(So Granny is taboo. Then as with the Chibi Usagi, I probably shouldn't use the world Little Girl.)

She didn't seem to know the meaning of 'Loli', so Akalilo seemed to work just fine.

“... Anyways, if you're recruiting, go ask elsewhere. I don't want to serve anyone.”  
(Hiiro)

“And that's why you're on a journey?” (Liliyn)

“Right. I plan on seeing the world. I won't let anyone get in my way.” (Hiiro)

Neither side would back down. Their eyes met, and sparks flew. Finally, Liliyn smiled once more.

“Kukuku, you said that before me without showing a sign of fear. You've truly peaked my interest.” (Liliyn)

It appears that instead of getting hated, Hiiro had merely increased her interest in him.

“As I thought, you should become mine, Hiiro Okamura.” (Liliyn)

“And am I not rejecting your offer here?” (Hiiro)

Liliyn puckers her lips, and makes an unpleasant expression.

“Hmph, so where do you plan on heading from here?” (Liliyn)

“Is that related to you in any way?” (Hiiro)

“It appears that he was searching for a town.” (Silva)

Hiiro turned his glare to Silva. Hiiro clicked his tongue as the pervert mouthed unnecessary things. Liliyn thinks for a bit, and widens her smile once more.

“A town... did you not know? There are no towns here.” (Liliyn)

“I know. There's one far, far away, right?” (Hiiro)

“No, by here, I mean... You're an 『Evila』, yet you don't know? Kukuku, you're stranger of an existence than I first thought.” (Liliyn)

She laughs loudly, and shivers run down Hiiro's back.

“What are you trying to say?” (Hiiro)

Asking that probably wasn't the best idea.

“There's only a single town that can be called as such in the entire demon world. There's no way you wouldn't know... if you were an 『Evila』. No, even if you were just someone who lived in this continent.” (Liliyn)

She takes on a triumphant expression, as she looks down on Hiiro. But Hiiro being as he was, did not display any expression on his face. Inside his head, he was a bit startled.

(Only one town? Right, Silva called this not a town, but a settlement.)

Far, far away, there was not a town, but a settlement. Silva said as such. Even so, why is there but a single town? Hiiro's curiosity was alight.

“Hmm, it seems you really didn't know. I see... Kukuku.” (Liliyn)

Liliyn nods her head over and over. She constantly gazes in Hiiro's direction.

“It seems you're curious, so let me teach you.” (Liliyn)

Her superiority complex was quite clear in her words. But since Hiiro had a desire to obtain the information, he held himself back.

As he stayed silent, Liliyn arbitrarily continued the conversation.

“Listen here. The Demon World has many settlements, but all of them have low populations. The amount of 『Evila』 races is high, but the actual numbers within races is scarce. They don't have any large scale settlements that can be called something like a town. Do you know why? In general, the 『Evila』 stick within their own races, and they have a high level of pride. Though a classification has been set up for the 『Evila』 race, few actually care about it. A small number of a single race is unable to assert itself as a town.” (Liliyn)

Inevitably, instead of being called towns, there were only small communities formed by the members of a single race.

“Even the most numerous 『Imp Race』 has numbers less than one hundred. Of course, with a hundred, they could build a village, but the 『Imps』 don't have such motivations. No, none of the other races have any such motivations either. They just live by gathering together. That's the 『Evila』 way of life.” (Liliyn)

Hiiro didn't know the 『Evila』 had such a trait. Though there are plenty of races, interracial populations are low, so they can't build anything like a city. If the races were to gather, and work together, it would be a different story, but most of them don't interact with each other.

“But there is a single exception. That is the one I told you about, the single town. No, the capital.” (Liliyn)

“... 【Demon Capital, Xaos】.” (Hiiro)

“Oh, so you already knew.” (Liliyn)

What came to mind was 【Demon Capital, Chaos】. It seems that was a place separate from the rest of the continent.

“Right, only the Demon Capital is different. Long ago, the first one to call themselves the Demon King created it. In there, various races of 『Evila』 make their homes.”  
(Liliyn)

“The Demon King gathered them to protect the capital?” (Hiiro)

“I see you’re quick on the uptake. But that’s not all. It seems that the Demon King delighted in associating with strong individuals.” (Liliyn)

“By the way, by associating, she means XXXXXXX. Nofofofof.” (Silva)  
(TL: That is a censor bar.)

Hiiro and Liliyn’s faces get died a light shade of red. They glare at the pervert with their eyes half closed. It’s not that the context was hard to understand, but Silva didn’t really have to put it in words. It was irritating.

“Ahem. Anyways, that’s how it is. The Demon King traversed the Demon World, and invited all the strong individuals they could find.” (Liliyn)

“Oy, won’t most people reject an offer like that.” (Hiiro)

“Yes, but most knew who they were dealing with.” (Liliyn)

“...?” (Hiiro)

“The Demon King possessed an enormous amount of power, she was quite a beauty.”  
(Liliyn)

“Beauty? Was the Demon King not a man?” (Hiiro)

“Nope, she’s female.” (Liliyn)

“...” (Hiiro)

“Her appearance was flowing with elegance, and regardless of the gender of whoever she was dealing with, she was able to steal their hearts. And she was also strong, with an overwhelming amount of charisma. There were few, if any, men who could refuse a request from her.” (Liliyn)

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 72 The Visiting Red Rain

---

Hiiro: 「...haa, so basically, the Demon Lord's gathered all the powerful and famous men in the Demon world and gave them a Harem?」

Liliyn: 「Kukuku, well that's about right.」

Hiiro: 「And so the offspring born during this time prospered and are right now living in the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 ?」

Liliyn: 「You're a clever boy. That's precisely it.」

When the Demon Lord position was filled by a woman, men and children of various races across the Demon World became united. As their descendants gradually increased, they slowly began to form what is known as a country. This would certainly explain the circumstances as to how the 『Evila』, who did not believe in coexistence with other races, formed a country.

In other words, that city was filled with many 『Evila』 who had inherited the blood of the Demon Lord.

Hiiro: 「I get it. So the current Demon Lord, actually, not just him. The entire populace have the previous Demon Lord's blood flowing through their veins, right?」

Liliyn: 「Well, kinda. It's not unusual to encounter people of other races who have migrated there as the capital accepts anyone, regardless of race. There are no average people there. I mean, there are even some bizarre freaks lurking about. 」

Liliyn stared at Hiiro, as if indicating that he was a prime example of this, yet-

Hiiro: (As opposed to me, this brat is even more eccentric but...there's also that pervert over there...)

Silva, noticing Hiiro glancing at him, emitted a complacent smile. If put succinctly, Hiiro thought it was creepy.

Liliyn: 「Now then, let's address the main issue. You, who didn't know anything about the town, er, country that any 『Evila』 should know, are making your way towards it? You do know that the country was involved in a war just a month ago, right?」

Indeed. About a month prior, the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 gathered its martial forces in preparation for the war against the 『Gabranth』. Although war was easily prevented by the Demon Lord's conduct, it is not difficult to expect that this problem would cause all hell to break loose in the future.

Liliyn: 「Not to mention, I've heard that they've started up something with the 『Humas』 .」

Hiiro: 「What was that?」

This was the first time he heard of such a thing. The reason they destroyed the bridge located on the 『Gabranth』 border was so they could avoid war. As such, Hiiro could not comprehend the reason why they had decided to involve themselves with the 『Humas』 this time.

Hiiro: 「Are they planning on warring with the humans now?」

Liliyn: 「Nn<sup>(1)</sup>? Aa<sup>(2)</sup>, no, you're mistaken. The way I phrased it was misleading, huh. It seems that they're trying to form an alliance with the 『Humas』 .」

Hiiro: 「...is that true?」

Liliyn slightly raised both arms and shrugged her shoulders as she spoke.

Liliyn: 「Who knows? It's merely a rumour. I only heard that this was apparently declared during the Demon Lord's speech. Well, seeing as how the current Demon Lord is as sweet as honey, it seems plausible.」

Hiiro: 「Seems like they're quite a forgiving.」

Liliyn: 「Not really. There were many who had their friends and family killed by the 『Humas』 . In the middle of this despair came the alliance. Also, the one who advocated it was the little girl known as the Demon Lord.」

Hiiro: 「Hey, wait a minute! Is the Demon Lord a female?」

Liliyn: 「Aa, though the previous one was male. The one right now is the little girl Eveam, that guy's daughter.」

Little girl<sup>(3)</sup>. It couldn't be helped that Liliyn would call most women as such. However, this was the first time that Hiiro heard about the Demon Lord being a woman. As the Demon Lord was often portrayed as a male in games, Hiiro arbitrarily assumed that was their gender.

Liliyn: 「Currently, the capital might be in a considerable uproar. The 『Evila』 there consider themselves as the supreme power. Even during the war with the 『Gabranth』, there are many that believed they would have won were it not for the Demon Lord's interference. Also, there's the proposed alliance. This in itself is enough of a reason for all of their frustrations to explode. In the event that it does detonate, it's entirely possible that riots will break out in the near future. Are you really planning on going to such a dangerous country, boy?」

Hiiro knew she began the discussion with the intention of not letting him go. However, there was some truth in what Liliyn said. Should Hiiro head to the capital at such a time and find himself caught up in the riots, it was possible that it would become very troublesome. It was also the home turf of the Demon Lord. Furthermore, it was certain that there would be people of greater levels than Hiiro, possessing mountainous strength.

Attempting to collect information inconspicuously under such circumstances would be quite a challenge. Of course, Hiiro could accomplish it were he to make good use of his 《Word Magic》, however, he understood that it was the way of the world to preserve his use of magic only in particularly irregular situations.

Hiiro somehow vaguely realised that, ever since he was summoned, he seemed to be a presence that often got caught up in problems and turmoil. He could not deny the possibility that he would become involved in something troublesome, should he go towards the capital.

Hiiro: (I wanted to see the country at least once though...)

No matter what one said, it was still the Capital of the Demon Country. He could

somehow stipulate that this continent's size was on a different scale when compared to the human and beast countries. It is precisely because of this that Hiiro wanted to experience it for himself, even if only once.

As it was such a huge continent, Hiiro thought that it would definitely be full of delicious food and valuable books. It was without a doubt a place that he wanted to check out for himself.

Hiiro: (Yeah, especially the books. I've heard that they have 'that' over there...)

As Hiiro made a contemplative face in silence, he casually glanced outside the window. What appeared before him were mountains and a sky being filled with a white glow. It seemed that day had apparently arrived. It appeared that they had been talking for a long period of time. Yet, in that instance, Hiiro noticed something strange.

Although the bright light of day could be seen from far away, it had yet to enter the vicinity of the mansion. As he began contemplating what on earth this could mean-

\*Guraguraguragura!\*([4](#))

The mansion began to suddenly sway significantly. As Hiiro realized what was happening, he began to brace himself in response to the vibrations. Yet, as he saw Liliyn's nonchalant demeanor, Hiiro gave off a dubious expression as he stared at her in wonder.

Liliyn: 「I see, well, it's not really a disaster, it's kind of like an event that occurs often around here, it's the way of the world.」

Silva: 「Indeed, that is correct.」

It seemed that the two were familiar with the swaying. This could be determined as there was no signs of panic visible from either of them.

After a while, the vibrations slowly decreased before fading away completely. Liliyn folded her arms as she began to converse with Silva.

Liliyn: 「I wonder how long it will be this time?」

Silva: 「I am also curious. As the last time was 3 days, would this time not be even longer?」

Liliyn: 「Reasoning?」

Silva: 「Although the argument supporting this is that the shaking lasted longer than the previous time, it seems that...」

Silva drew close to the window, gazing at the sky while spewing out words.

Silva: 「It seems that the size of the 《Forbidden Emperor Cloud<sup>(5)</sup>》 is larger than the previous time.」

Hiiro: 「Forbidden Emperor Cloud?」

As Hiiro heard an unfamiliar word, he involuntarily let them leak from his mouth.

Liliyn: 「Kukuku<sup>(6)</sup>, I see. If you don't know, then I'll tell you.」

She was a fellow whose way of speaking seemed to always elicit irritation. Yet, as Liliyn joyfully deflected Hiiro's gaze, she began to speak her answer.

Liliyn: 「The thing referred to as the 《Forbidden Emperor Cloud》 is a red cloud positioned high above this very mansion.」

Hiiro: 「Red cloud?」

Liliyn: 「Instead of words, it'd probably be better for you to see it with your own eyes.」

As she said thus, Hiiro approached the window in a similar fashion to Silva as he looked up towards the sky. In doing so, he literally saw red clouds blanketing the skies. Following this, Red Rain<sup>(7)</sup>, which was considered rare in this world, began to fall.

As Hiiro's eyes were mesmerized by the Red Rain that he had seen for the first time, he simply stood there, rooted in that singular spot. However, as he had heard the previous exchange between Silva and Liliyn, he realised that this rain was likely the cause of the

vibrations. Although the rain was undoubtedly bizarre, the matter of whether it was the cause of the mansion's shaking was questionable.

And yet, as if preemptively addressing Hiiro's misgivings, Silva answered.

Silva: 「This Red Rain barely encompasses the area surrounding this island. That is to say, this rain only falls upon lake.」

Hiiro: 「Why doesn't it rain on the island?」

Silva: 「The 《Forbidden Emperor Cloud》 seems to be a cloud that consists of evaporated red rain. The evaporated water rises through the air and swirls into a cloud and, after a substantial amount of time passes, falls back down to earth in the form of rain. Well, if I told you to think that it 'comes and goes', would it be easier to understand?」

Hiiro: 「I see. While I don't understand why the rain falls in such a manner, it's true that, from what I can see, it doesn't seem to be raining on the island.」

No matter from what angle he looked, Hiiro could not see the sight of the windows and the garden or earth outside being drenched due to the rain. It seemed that it did not rain on the island, as Silva had indicated.

Liliyn: 「But you know, the color is not the only thing about the Red Rain that is different than normal. There is one other unique trait that it possesses.」

Hiiro: 「Trait?」

Liliyn: 「It makes magic ineffective. Basically, it has the power of a magic seal.」

The one who had answered was Liliyn. As Hiiro shifted his gaze towards her, Liliyn began to move her mouth.

Liliyn: 「It seems that when this rain begins pouring, magic cannot be used within the vicinity. Although the reason for this is still unknown, during my time on this island, there have been no exceptions to this, including us. I dare you to try.」

Being told thus, Hiiro attempted to concentrate magic into his fingertips as per usual.

Hiiro: (...Nn?)

His fingertips became slightly warm as they glowed with a pale light as normal, yet, no matter how much Hiiro concentrated, nothing happened. He tried to write a word in the air, yet, nothing was projected.

In addition, it had suddenly occurred to him that he could no longer ascertain Mikazuki's location. As Hiiro had previously installed words onto Mikazuki, he could grasp her general location by sensing his magic. However, at the moment, he could not feel a thing.

Hiiro: (It...it's been canceled? Moreover, it was by force?)

Hiiro's thoughts were on the mark. From what Silva had said, this rain was called 《Magic Cancellor》. It seemed to possess the effect of forcibly shutting down magic. As such, those who were near the rain were deprived of the use of magic.

In this situation, it was not possible for Hiiro to write and install words on his body for protection. As he couldn't believe that such a strange rain existed, Hiiro instinctively clicked his tongue.

Hiiro: (No,.....isn't that wrong?)

It was there that Hiiro suddenly had an epiphany. The reason he felt the installed words disappeared was due to the risk associated with writing two words with 《Word Magic》 which he had done earlier. If he wrote two words, all one word spells installed would disappear. He had forgotten about it.

Hiiro: (However, even if I didn't use the 《Two-Word Chain<sup>(8)</sup>》 skill, does this mean that they would still disappear even in this rain.....ah, wait a sec!)

While making sure his concern did not appear on his face, he peered at his own body, exhaling in relief as he took note of his skin tone. This alleviation was due to the 「Change」 | 『𐄌』 word's effect had not disappeared. Therefore, he felt secure as his appearance remained one belonging to the 『Imp Race』. If he were to return to being

human now, he would not be able to make up an excuse.

Hiiro: (But even so, what the hell does this mean...?)

It was at this point that Hiiro began to contemplate the differences between his installed words and Liliyn's barrier magic with the spell 「Change」 | 『化』. While the fact that both groups are magic remain unchanged, the former continued to maintain its effects by using magic as fuel while the latter has already produced its results, meaning that the spell has already been cast.

Hiiro: (So magic effects that are fixed seem to be unaffected. It seems that the scratches from the maid have been cured as well.)

If indeed all magic that had been cast was canceled indiscriminately, then his shoulder, wounded by Shamoe's assault last night, should have scratches re-appearing as the 「Heal」 | 『治』 word's effect would disappear..

In other words, rather than sealing magic itself, it suppresses the emission of magic. In other words, magic itself.

Hiiro: (Apparently, instead of sealing magic, it seems to seal the use of magic power.)

However, this consequentially benefited Hiiro. It was obviously for the better that Hiiro had not returned to his human appearance. Even so, he was amazed at the existence of such an environment.

Hiiro: (The demon world....it's really a place where you can't get bored, huh.)

Although the demon world's environment was just that, to Hiiro, it was completely different to what he had experienced before. He couldn't possibly imagine that an environment would render him unable to use magic. As this became a matter of life and death for Hiiro, he sincerely thought from the bottom of his heart that it was good for him to find out about the red rain.

If he fought a monster without knowing this and this rain began to fall in the vicinity, he would be left confused as to why his magic was suddenly rendered ineffective, that

confusion possibly allowing a monster to deprive Hiiro of his life. It is precisely because of this that Hiiro genuinely welcomed this experience.

Hiiro: 「I understand that I can't use magic when this rain is nearby. So what happens if I touch it?」

When near such rain, magic becomes unusable. If he should touch it, it was possible that something of corresponding side-effects could assault his body. Concerned, Hiiro posed such a question, yet, Silva's answer was surprising.

Silva: 「What Hiiro-sama<sup>(9)</sup> is concerned about will not occur.」

Hiiro: 「So if I touch it, I won't get a curse or anything similar?」

Although Hiiro thought he had a little bit of a 'game brain', in this world, it's better to be err on the side of caution.

Silva: 「There is no such thing. If you were only to touch, then no problem should arise.」

The way he phrased his answer caught Hiiro's attention. While Hiiro was sceptical as to whether there was something else to be wary of, he stared at Silva.

Silva: 「It is true that Red Rain certainly possesses characteristics similar to water. However, unlike normal water, Red Rain possesses considerable weight.」

Hiiro: 「Weight? You mean, it's heavy?」

Silva: 「You are correct. In addition, it pelts down from high above in the sky. If one were to be rained upon, the shock received would be quite significant. Therefore, I believe that trying to pass through that rain would prove....quite traumatizing, yes?」

Hiiro: 「.....」

He felt that the trauma one would experience would not be to the extent where it could be expressed with the word 'painful'. However, it was undeniable that, from what Hiiro could see, the rain did not seem to torrent down with a \*zaza\*<sup>(10)</sup>. And yet, the sound of the rain was as large as the Guerrilla Rainstorm<sup>(11)</sup>. Evidently, every single droplet

seemed to carry an immense impact.

Hiiro: 「Come to think of it, you didn't answer my question earlier. What was that shaking a little while ago?」

Silva: 「Aa, that was the aftermath of the barrier that the lady prepared being dissolved.」

Hiiro: 「Barrier? Now that you mention it, you guys did say something about that earlier.」

Silva: 「Indeed. During the night, the surroundings are full of Rank S monsters as a large amount of them make inhabit this area. Although if we were to be attacked, Ojou-sama<sup>(12)</sup> would undoubtedly have no problems however, as she dislikes having her sleep disturbed, she set up the barrier in order to repel those monsters from entering the premises.」

It was true that disturbing someone's sleep could not be forgiven. Hiiro could completely understand this sentiment.

Silva: 「The barrier is also made up of magic. Thus, as the Red Rain forcibly canceled the barrier, the mansion shook in recoil. There is no need for concern. However...」

Silva abruptly narrowed his eyes as he shifted his line-of-sight towards the outside of the window.

「Gugyagyagyagya~~~~!!!<sup>(13)</sup>」

A deafening howl could be heard. As tension Involuntarily ran throughout his entire body, Hiiro peered out the window in a similar fashion to Silva. Liliyn, the only one who had her arms folded and eyes closed, exhaustingly spat out a sigh as she slowly opened her eyes.

Liliyn: 「As I thought, he came...Baron Bone Lizard<sup>(14)</sup>.」

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 73 The Monster of SS Rank

---

As soon as the group heard the cry, they exited the mansion in order to confirm what it was. As soon as they passed the door entrance, they could see something rising from the red lake.

“T-this thing...”

Baron Bone Lizard. That was the monster’s name. Hiiro had never heard that monster’s name before, however, unknown monsters like this were to be expected. That aside, the atmosphere around this monster was similar to something that he had encountered before.

(No, this presence.)

The monster definitely had an atmosphere different from other monsters Hiiro had encountered, yet, for some reason, it felt familiar to him. It was clear that the “Baron Bone Lizard” wasn’t a monster that he had encountered before.

During his time in Japan, there was a TV show that talked about reptiles similar to Komodo Dragons. The contours and physique of this monster were the same, however, its size was beyond comprehension.

It was at least 10 meters long. Furthermore, it had no muscle nor meat, making it unclear as to how it was capable of movement. It’s whole frame was constructed out of bones. It looked as if a dinosaur fossil at a museum had just came back to life.

The bones were pure bright red. It emitted a crimson glow that one could use to clearly identify it in the middle of the night.

“For fuck’s sake, even though this mutant usually stays holed up in the bottom of the lake-” (Liliyn)

Liliyn spoke with a displeased expression.

“For it to come out at this time. What an annoying bunch of bones.” (Liliyn)

When Hiiro heard those words

(Usually at the bottom? Doesn’t that mean it rose up to the surface because the Red Rain appeared?)

From his analysis, Hiiro knew that the current situation was quite treacherous. This was mainly due to his magic being rendered unusable. If it was normal monster, he would have very little issue beating it with [Thorn-piercer]. However, the monster before him was anything but. As he contemplated, he inhaled sharply as he suddenly remembered.

(This feeling, it's the same feeling I felt before against that guy.)

Recalling those memories, Hiiro involuntarily shuddered as he unconsciously stepped backwards. This was caused by trauma he had received earlier, yet, he didn't take his eyes off of it as he cleared his throat.

(Fu, no doubt, this atmosphere is that of an SS ranked monster.)

When Hiiro separated from Arnold and Muir, he encountered a monster by accident. It was monster called [Duke Eagle]. After coming to this world (Edea), it was the first time that he had fought with his life on the line.

The Duke Eagle was a SS Ranked monster. It wasn't a monster that Hiiro, who was around level 50, could face by himself. Although he was fortunate as he managed to repel the monster, it was a life and death experience.

Now, a monster possessing a similar foreboding atmosphere to that previous encounter was right before his eyes. That was the Baron Bone Lizard

(This is bad...this is really bad...)

He had leveled up since then, however, without his magic, he could do little. At his current level, he would be able to face an S ranked monster normally. However, without his magic, he wouldn't stand a chance against this monster.

Just as Hiiro clenched his teeth and tried to come up with a plan to escape, the Baron Bone Lizard opened its mouth wide. Unsure of what it was going to do, Hiiro looked at it in a daze

Kyiiiii!!!

It made a faint buzzing sound that reverberated throughout the surrounding area. Then, a red orb appeared in front of its open mouth, gradually increasing in size.

“To start off with a such a bold move, what did it think this place was?” (Liliyn)

A displeased, unsurprised expression appeared on her face. Her level was over 100. However, as she was incapable of utilising any magic in this situation, she could only resort to physical attacks. Unsure of where her composure came from, Hiiro scowled.

“Silva, give me that.” (Liliyn)

“Here is it” (Silva)

Obedying her orders, Silva, who was beside her, took out something from his chest. It was something that Hiiro was quite familiar with.

(That’s...the [Golden Rose]?)

Indeed, it was as Hiiro had indicated. The object was what had been on top of the Cactus Man’s head when they were passing through [Venom Mountain], the [Golden Rose]. This was something that Liliyn had ordered Silva to retrieve.

(But why take the rose out now...?)

In the instant that Hiiro attempted to understand what Liliyn was going to do, she surprised him by munching on the [Gold Rose].

(She...ate it!?)

Hiiro didn’t expect her to eat and just stared blankly at her. She continued chewing and then.

Gokuri (Gulp)

It didn’t look like she enjoyed it, yet, it was clear that it had entered her stomach. She then proceeded to look at the Baron Bone Lizard with a keen eye.

“I’m still sleepy. I’ll have you disappear quickly you pile of bones” (Liliyn)

In spite of this, the one that had made the first move was the Bone Baron Lizard. The red orb that was over one meter in diameter suddenly shrunk to about a sphere with a diameter of 30 centimeters.

(It condensed its power?)

It probably planned to shoot it like a bullet. Yet, it was clear that what the monster had produced wasn’t just a mere bullet. It was definitely something much more powerful.

(From what I can remember, I think the [Duke Eagle] used something similar.)

Due to Hiiro’s experience, he was able to predict that the Baron Bone Lizard was about to do something dangerous. He felt sweat flowing down his spine.

“Hey brat, move out of the way” (Liliyn)

“Hey, you” (Hiiro)

“Just be good and move aside. I know you’re strong but stand back and watch my fight.” (Liliyn)

Saying thus, Liliyn jumped in front of Hiiro and faced the Baron Bone Lizard.

“Hey!” (Hiiro)

“Hiiro-sama, please come over here.” (Silva)

All of a sudden, Silva moved beside Hiiro, proposing thus as he bowed his head.

Hiiro accepted his proposal and stepped aside. He looked at Liliyn with doubt as she took on a SS ranked monster by herself.

(You can’t use magic right now!)

Even though she had Unique Magic, no matter how powerful it may be, she couldn’t use it right now. Both Silva and Liliyn herself should know this as well. And yet, she proceeded with her reckless action.

Hiiro himself was a irregular existence, however, it seemed that there were people even more abnormal.

Despite Hiiro’s concerns, Liliyn looked forward as she smiled fearlessly.

“Fuwa~, Hurry up and come at me small fry” (Liliyn)

A \*clack\* sound was heard, perhaps induced by Liliyn’s yawn.

[GuGyaGyaGyaGyaGya] (Some sort of roaring sound)

The condensed red orb flew at Liliyn.

Shuiiiiiiiiiiii! (Sound of something moving really fast in the air)

The orb came at Liliyn with tremendous speed. Without losing her smile, she casually held her right hand towards the orb.

A noise that sounded like something splitting could be heard upon collision as something flew out in response.

Gusa! (Stab)

At that moment, something golden had appeared in the center of the orb... ..  
... ..

.....a golden spike appeared in the center of the orb that the Baron Bone Lizard released.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 74

### The Origin of the Red Rain

---

The metal spike's size was enormous, its magnitude so large that a normal person would be rendered unable to deal with it.

The spike pierced the orb, pinning it to the ground. Unable to move, the orb slowly collapsed.

(What, what is that? Where did it come from?) (Hiiro)

Hiiro looked towards the direction where the spike flew from. In other words, he looked towards the sky. However, all he could see was the blanketing red cloud. There was nobody there.

Due to this, one could only wonder who had caused the orb to stop moving. As Hiiro thought, he could only come to the conclusion that it could not be anyone else but Liliyn. As she continued to emit her fearless smile, she flexed her finger towards the ground. In doing so-

\*Gusagusagusagusagusagusa-!\*

Once again, nails began to appear in the sky. Moreover, this time there were multiple of them. Those golden spikes began to pierce and embed themselves into Baron Bone Lizard's body, one after the other.

Witnessing such a scene, Hiiro was stunned as he simply stared. He had absolutely no clue what had just taken place. Before he was aware of it, the orb from earlier had disappeared. The monster pertaining a Rank of SS was immobilized as its entire body was punctured by countless spikes that had lashed out at it.

The sensation of imminent threat that Hiiro had felt earlier had completely disappeared in an instant, as if it were simply a passing breeze.

"Gu.....Gii.....Gaa....." (Baron Bone Lizard)

Baron Bone Lizard desperately attempted to move its body, yet, above it were incoming spikes flying towards it. In addition, the spikes were even larger than the previous ones. As there were a multitude of spikes, varying in sizes and lengths, it could be determined that more and more bones inside of its body would be broken. Its tail was pulverized from its roots. Even the limbs that supported its body were brutally and cruelly shattered.

What had stolen Hihiro's vision in the next moment was the sight of pitch black wings growing on Liliyn's black, her figure afloat in midair. Her blood-like crimson long hair swayed. The rear figure of the girl who possessed obsidian wings that seemed to encompass everything resembled a demon that often appeared in anime or games.

"Now then.....this should finish it." (Liliyn)

Liliyn brought her hand to the sky before swinging it down like a whip in the direction of the Baron Bone Lizard.

\*Pakipakipakipaki-!\* (TL: Sound of piercing?)

A single, massive spike appeared, its magnitude easily capable of obliterating the Baron Bone Lizard's body. It fell on top of the monster's head, shattering it to smithereens as it generated a tremendous shock wave.

The shock wave was so powerful, the debris came flying towards them. Similar to the orb from earlier, after a while it collapsed as if it were sand before being blown away by the wind.

The monster was completely stunned.

"Now, I guess it's about here, huh." (Liliyn)

As if she had just finished her shift at work, Liliyn indifferently spat out those words.

\*Pachin!\* (TL: Finger Snap.)

She lightly snapped her fingers. Then-

\*Piki\*.....\*Pikiki\*.....\*Pariiiiiin!\*

As Hihiro thought that the surrounding space had cracks appearing through it, a tone that resembled glass breaking resounded.

“What!” (Hiiro)

Hiiro looked around him restlessly. The whole scene returned to what it was before the body of the Baron Bone Lizard had appeared. The [Forbidden Emperor Cloud] was still present and the Red Rain continued to pelt down upon the empty field before him.

The shattered remains of the Baron Bone Lizard lay at the center of the field. All the golden spikes that Liliyn used in her assault had disappeared and the ground was completely intact.

“.....?” (Hiiro)

Unable to logically analyze the situation, Hiiro stared at the situation with a confused expression. Ignoring Hiiro, Lilyn retracted her wings and landed on the ground as if nothing happened.

“Clean that up. I’m going to sleep” (Liliyn)

“Understood. Have a good night, master.” (Silva)

As expected, Silva nodded his head as he acknowledged her order. While Hiiro was looking at Liliyn’s back, she turned around and said.

“What do you think? I’m strong, right brat? Fufu~n” (Liliyn)

She said with an air of superiority. Looking at the dumbfounded Hiiro, she smiled with satisfaction as she entered the house.

As ordered by his master, Silva approached the shattered bones of the bone lizard.

“Hey, are you sure it’s alright to approach it?” (Hiiro)

“Yes, it has already been annihilated” (Silva)

“A-Annihilated? So it’s dead? You’re saying It died?” (Hiiro)

Hearing Hiiro seeking confirmation twice, Silva nodded as he spoke.

“I am sure you are surprised, but that is the extent of my master’s power.” (Silva)

“...Power? You mean that was magic just now?” (Hiiro)

“You are completely right” (Silva)

“Hold it, Isn’t that weird? From what I’ve experienced so far, you shouldn’t be able to use magic in the Red Rain right?” (Hiiro)

That was something that Silva had told Hiiro. Hiiro even confirmed it himself by using magic. It was clear that it had been disabled at that time.

“Yes, it is clear that magic cannot be used at the current time. However, there is an exception.” (Silva)

“Exception?” (Hiiro)

“Indeed. It is this.” (Silva)

Saying thus, Silva picked up something and presented it to Hiiro. Upon closer inspection, what he held was a petal of the <<Golden Rose>>.

“What’s that?” (Hiiro)

“This flower has a special effect. As I said before, this flower contains a considerable amount of life force in contrast to its appearance.” (Silva)

Hiiro heard it before when he was collecting it.

“That life force is very compatible with living beings. It will bring numerous benefits to those that consume it.” (Silva)

“Benefits?” (Hiiro)

“Yes, it is called <<Complete Origin>>”

“What’s that?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro heard an unfamiliar word.

“In short, the person who consumes this flower will be immune to abnormal statuses.”  
(Silva)

Abnormal statuses? ...I see, so that's why she could utilise magic? No, actually, the effect of the Red Rain is an abnormal status?” (Hiiro)

“You are absolutely right. The magic seal caused by the red rain is an abnormal status”  
(Silva)

“I see. For it to have such a convenient ability...” (Hiiro)

Of course, if Hiiro used [Word magic] and wrote the words [Restore] or [Normal], he would be able to achieve the same effect. However, because magic was sealed off during the [Red Rain], he was unable to use those effects.

“I see, is that why she sent an old man like you to a poisonous mountain to retrieve it?”  
(Hiiro)

Hiiro was somehow able to understand the situation. In order to face this monster, preparation was necessary. That was why Liliyn sent Silva. However, Silva shook his head and said.

“Nofofo, I'm sorry but your are wrong” (Silva)

“What? I'm wrong?” (Hiiro)

“Yes. Whether my master had this or not, a monster of this degree is not difficult for her”  
(Silva)

“...Then why did she use something like this, this time?” (Hiiro)

“Even if she looks like that, she possesses a strong desire to reveal her power...to put it succinctly, she enjoys boasting her superior force.” (Silva)

“Is she a kid or something?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro let out a breath as he said it. Silva responded with a happy smile.

“Nofofo, does this not display the extent of how obsessed she is with you?” (Silva)

“.....?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro knitted his eyebrows as he craned his head.

“There was no need for her to reveal her trump card to a worthless enemy. As she was interested in Hiiro-sama, she used her magic in an attempt to surprise you. Nofofofofofo. (Silva)

It seems that she used the <<Golden Rose>> only because she wanted to show off.

“But is it possible to defeat it without magic?” (Hiiro)

Yes. That was the strange part. He could understand who was the stronger one level-wise. Yet, he did not think one could emerge victorious against an SS Ranked monster without the use of magic.

“Fumu, fumu. Certainly, if the opponent was a normal one, it would be impossible. That monster is Baron Bone Lizard. A unique monster befitting of an SS Rank.” (Silva)

It was precisely as Hiiro had thought.

“However, no matter how strong an individual may be, they will always possess a weakness. Although Baron Bone Lizard is no different from such persons, it is also not an exception to this. Said weak point is a cylindric bone which acts like its core. Unlike the other bones, this one singular bone has a considerably lower defense value.” (Silva)

“Is that so? Meaning that if it’s destroyed, it will be defeated? (Hiiro)

“Indeed. However, no normal adventurer would be capable of easily destroying it. Only those that have over 600 Attack Points are capable of destroying said bone. (Silva)

Although it may seem like obtaining 600 Attack Points would be difficult, if one was able to, they would be able to obliterate said monster in one-hit.

“Basically, it’s weak in close-combat?” (Hiiro)

“Indeed. It’s specialty is shooting it’s Bone Ball, the red orb that appeared earlier. Other than that....(Silva)

Even though Hiiro had heard a lot, it mostly consisted of ranged-attacks. Rather, Hiiro was more surprised learning that the ball was made from bone as he had not expected it.

“Even so, considerable swiftness is required in order to get close. One also needs great perception to find the cylinder, and the power to attack it. Ojou-sama possesses all of such qualities. Thus, from the very beginning, there was no need for her to use magic to defeat it. It has always been as such. (Silva)

“I see. By the way, I wanna ask you something.” (Hiiro)

“If it is the matter of Ojou-sama’s magic, you realize that, should I not obtain her express permission, my mouth shall remain closed, yes?” (Silva)

“I don’t give two shits about that.” (Hiiro)

“Fo!?” (Silva)

As Silva thought Hiiro would be curious about Liliyn’s magic, he was shocked upon hearing Hiiro’s response.

“What I wanted to ask about is the <<Golden Rose>>.” (Hiiro)

“Ha, haa. Are you perchance referring to the Red Rain?” (Silva)

“Yeah, how long’s it gonna stay there? Earlier, you said that it would last for three days. During this time, we can’t use magic right?” (Hiiro)

“That is correct. The previous time, it had continued to rain for a period of three days. However, as I had stated earlier, scale of the red clouds this time is particularly large. The Baron Bone Lizard that appeared this time is also larger than the previous. Ah, I forgot to mention that the Baron Bone Lizard’s power is proportional to the size of the red cloud. Since the energy of the clouds is usually confined within the lake, the Baron Bone Lizard absorbs the power from the Red Rain. It is because of this that the larger the cloud is, the more powerful the Baron Bone Lizard becomes. Furthermore, this is only time that it has initiated an attack. In addition, even if we slay it, after some time, it will respawn from the lake.” (Silva)

It seemed to be a monster that appeared often. Furthermore, as it is a timid creature, it waits for an opportunity when magic cannot be used before beginning its hunt. It appeared that it usually fed on weak monsters that lived in the lake.

"I see. I understand the details about that monster. So? How do I get to the outside from here?" (Hiiro)

"The...outside?" (Silva)

"Yeah, I no longer have any business here, right? I'm gonna go continue my journey."  
(Hiiro)

Silva frowned upon hearing Hiiro's words..

"I apologise. However, the Red Rain is still pouring outside. It is dangerous. As I said before, the rain is very heavy. Because Baron Bone Lizards are originally born from it, it will not cause damage to them. However, on normal bodies, it will feel like countless stones pelting upon them from the sky. It would cause tremendous damage." (Silva)

"Guh..." (Hiiro)

Hiiro looked up the sky while groaning. It was exactly as Silva had indicated. In this kind of rain, even if one had an umbrella, it would not be able to withstand it. Also, the boat that was required to cross the lake was going to sink.

"Is that so? In other words, I can't get out if this rain continues, huh?" (Hiiro)

"It would appear so." (Silva)

Hiiro sighed deeply.

(Damn. I just wanted to grab some meat, yet, it turned into this disaster. Why do I always get caught up in trouble?) (Hiiro)

However, it was a fact that Hiiro was rendered unable to use his magic at the present time. Even if he asked Silva for the <<Golden Rose>>, there would not be any in stock.

(It can't be helped. Even though it's troublesome to be near that brat, I don't have much choice but to ascertain the situation first, huh...) (Hiiro)

Following this, he returned to his room to sleep.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 75 The Apologizing Maid

---

When I woke up, it was already slightly past noon When I went to the dining room, I saw Silva preparing lunch with great timing as usual. It seems he knew that I up, and when I asked, he only responded, as usual, that it was because he is a butler.

It was useless to respond to him, so I let it be. When I was eating in silence, I sighed as I heard the sound of rain-drops splashing around the house

Then, I suddenly remembered. I wonder if Mikazuki is alright.. Mikazuki should be experiencing this weird phenomena for the first time.. It's bad if she panics and fall to the lake.

Because I used <Two Word Chain>, the word I placed on Mikazuki disappeared, and I can't pinpoint her location. I think I will go check it out after finishing the meal.

Even though I can vaguely feel the location, I tried to ask Silva where the animal feeding ground is, it seems to be at the back of the mansion. After that, I quickly went out of the mansion and went to search for Mikazuki.

sfx : Zazazazazaza (Rain)

Even though it was raining in the vicinity, it was strange how it didn't rain here. This is really a different world, logic can't be used here. While thinking that, I continue to walk.

Just like Silva said, there's something like a shed behind the mansion. There, I saw something like a chicken with plump wings. Nearby, i saw Mikazuki sitting calmly while with her eyes close.

As for why she seems so relax, it was because there's a person grooming it.

“Kui !” (Mikazuki)

When Mikazuki realize Hihiro's presence, Mikazuki called over Hihiro many times as if he is trying to get noticed by him. But, unlike Mikazuki, the other person is wearing a stiff face and looking at him.

That person was the one that he fought last night. (TL Note : Not that kind of “fight” :D )

“I-I-I am S-Sorry !” (Shamoe)

That person who's confused and keep apologizing is no other than this mansion's maid, Shamoe, who certainly caused some trouble with him last night, Shamoe.

"Kui ?" (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki confused why Shamoe is apologizing to it's master, and looking at back and forth between each of them.

"E-E-Ehm.." (Shamoe)

Shamoe was panicking and don't know what to say. Watching such a scene, Hiiro only shrug his shoulder in amazement.

"I won't just let it slide you know ? Since, I almost died last night." (Hiiro)

That night, if I didn't resisted, I would certainly died. Even if I survived, I would recieve a significant injury. I won't just let it slide like that.

Hearing that, she felt really bad. She's shaking while holding both hand in front of her chest. She thought that Hiiro might be thinking of revenge.

Of course, Hiiro don't have such an intention. Even though last night, he drew his katana because of the danger, he didn't intend to kill people that are not hostile.

"Can you remember?" (Hiiro)

"Y-Y-Yes !" (Shamoe)

"That's troublesome huh.." (Hiiro)

If she didn't remember anything, she wouldn't feel guilty. But, looks like she was conscious during the fight.

Since she can't do anything but watch, she's probably suffering since she has a weak heart.

"I-I am truly sorry ! Shamoe have done such unforgivable action !" (Shamoe)

She keeps apologizing over and over.

It's true that she caused it, but Hiiro can only sympathize with her. Watching a girl apologizing over and over again, mad Hiiro feel bad.

"What are you doing with this droolingbird ?" (Hiiro)

“Eh ? A droolingbird ?” (Shamoe)

“Kui Kui Kui Kui Kui !” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki was licking her master’s face as if she have not seen him for days.

“Eit, I always told you to stop that, didn’t i ?” (Hiiro) (TL Note : Ice cream !)

“Kuiiiii !” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki shook it’s head as if refusing. Then, Hiiro said,

“This is why.” (Hiiro)

After forcefully pushing Mikazuki away, he show his face full of droll to Shamoe.

“I-I see...” (Shamoe)

Understanding that, she gave him something like a handkerchief from her pocket to Hiiro. Hiiro obediently took it and wiped his face.

“Then, What were you doing with this guy ?” (Hiiro)

“O-Oh, That’s right, I was brushing it.” (Shamoe)

“Is that so ? Looks like, this guy have given you some trouble.” (Hiiro)

Mikazuki bent it’s neck as if apologizing.

“N-No, it’s nothing ! I can only do this much ! A-And, there was yesterday’s accident. I’m sorry because I wasn’t able to apologize right away !” (Shamoe)

Looks like she intended to apologize last night. But since she can’t find him, she tried to atone it by helping Mikazuki. She tried to apologize indirectly. If she have prepared her heart, of course she would apologize right away, but seeing Hiiro come in suddenly, her head was spinning.

Seeing this girl trembling before him, Hiiro fold his arm and say,

“What are you so afraid of ?” (Hiiro)

“E-Ehm, T-That is..” (Shamoe)

Hiiro don’t care about race differences. That’s why he didn’t know the problem of a half.

“That’s because, half is a detested existence..” (Shamoe)

“Hoh...” (Hiiro)

What she’s saying is, not only in here, a Half is a taboo. That’s why they got despised by all race. (TL Note : I can see a flag in the distance.. Damn you Hiiro ! ) That’s why..

“Unable to use both Magic and <Binding> huh...” (Hiiro)

That’s right, the characteristic of a Half, is that they inherited the physical characteristic from both race, but they didn’t inherit the unique skill from them. Which is Magic and <Binding> in this case. Since the blood cancel each other, they can’t used.

It’s the same with a cross-breed of <Humas> and <Evila>. Unable to use magic, the halves are considered as a Taboo and a symbol of disaster.

Of course, cross-breeding is against the law. If the child is found, it will either get banished or eliminated.

Shamoe’s mother which is an <Evila> was prepared for this when she gave birth to her. Her Father which is a <Gabranth> decided to search for a way to cross the continent and move away from his family. He told his wife and daughter that he will find it and definitely return.

But, when he’s gone, the mother and young Shamoe lived in the shed the the father built. The <Evila> nearby, notice this, and when they found out that Shamoe is a Half, they got banished.

They had nowhere to go and the father still hasn’t returned. Because they have made a promise to wait here, they didn’t want to leave this place.

Even though that the <Evila> disagreed with this, no one touched them. But, sneers and disdain are a everyday thing. No one even bother to look at them and treat them as if it is natural to hate them.

(TL Note : SHAMOEEEEEE !! TT\_TT )

Even though young Shamoe is fine, the mother’s heart is gradually broke. When Shamoe turned to 5 years old, the mother can’t bear it any longer and collapsed. Then, she died silently after.... (TL Note : Ugh..... )

Shamoe is now alone, and don’t know what to do. Seeing that her mother has passed away, the <Evila> nearby use this chance to get rid of her. They burnt down the shed that her father built.

After she had nowhere to return, she don't know where to go. She have no choice but to wander the continent, but she can't use Magic. This continent is not a kind place for a young girl.

She was unable to gather enough food. She don't know how to find a river to drink from. She was slowly dying. Reaching her limit, when she was about to accept her fate, something is looked down at her.

“That was Ojou-sama.” (Shamoe)

She didn't wear frightened face anymore, a small gentle smile can be seen.

“That time, she lend her hand to me, and it's Super Cool !! Ah~ Kya Kya~” (Shamoe)  
(TL Note : Shit. YURI ALERT !!)

“Hah ?” (Hiiro)

Shamoe had a sparkling eyes and approached Hiiro.

“She said to me who was lying on the ground, “If you want to live, come with me !” , Then... then, she employed me on this mansion ! Ojou-sama didn't even hate halves ! I'm very grateful to Ojou-sama ! ” (Shamoe)

As if she forgot about Hiiro, she didn't realize she was approaching Hiiro. When she noticed, she quickly fall back and hang her head.

“E-Eh, I-I'm Sorry ! I-I-I have shown such indecent thing ! Argh, Shamoe is such an Idiot ! Idiot ! ” (Shamoe)

While Hiiro is thinking that he has seen scene like this before, Shamoe knocked her head over and over on the animal shed's wall. Hiiro shrugged.

“Come on, I don't mind it. So, that's why you are working here huh ? Aside from that, is it okay to tell me that story ? I'm just a guest you know ?” (Hiiro)

Whether it's Liliyn or her parents, they should be a precious memory to her. Hiiro doubt Shamoe because she told such a story to a mere traveler. She smiled a little and shook her head.

“I-I heard from Silva that Hiiro is not a person that care about races.” (Shamoe)

(That Hentai-jiji, saying unnecessary thing.) (Hiiro)

Hiiro clench his fist in his heart.

“Th-That's why, even though it's an ugly story, I-I wanted you to listen.” (Shamoe)

“Is that so ? If you’re fine with it, then it’s alright. I have no intention to reveal it to anyone anyway. Let me praise you for having a good eye.” (Hiiro) (TL Note : Good eye as in good enough to know Hiiro’s a good guy.)

“Th-Thank you so much !” (Shamoe)

Even though Hiiro was boasting, Shamoe still thanked him.

(Mu, if it’s Ossan, he would have fight back, but somehow she’s too obedient that it’s a bit annoying.) (Hiiro)

Somehow, I miss how Arnold responds..

“Well, whatever, Oh, that’s right, i will call you Dojimeido (Clumsy Maid), hear me Dojimeido ?” (Hiiro)

Shamoe was dumbfounded.

“Dojimeido, of the full-moon night.” (Hiiro)

Hearing that, she sighed.

“Even though you can’t control your own power, don’t attack me next time okay ?” (Hiiro)

“E-Eh ? I-I’m sorry !” (Shamoe)

“You better search for a way to control it. Go ask the red loli. She should know some way since she lived for such a long time.” (Hiiro)

“A-Actually, I already asked and have been practicing it.” (Shamoe)

“It didn’t go well, huh..” (Hiiro)

“Y-Yes..” (Shamoe)

Shamoe dropped her shoulder and glanced at Mikazuki.

“Well, I guess it’s fine as long as you’re trying.” (Hiiro)

“Eh ?” (Shamoe)

“At least, I like people who try their best even if they failed.” (Hiiro)

“Eh ?” (Shamoe)

Hearing Hiiro’s word, Shamoe blushed.

“Fueeeeeee !?” (Shamoe) (TL Note : Rishia !!)

Hearing the sudden scream, Hiiro frowned.

“E-Eh, I-It’s just.. W-What do you mean by “Like” ? Fueeeeeee !” (Shamoe)

Shamoe put both of her hand on her cheeks. Hiiro is confused why she’s so surprised. Hiiro frowned and stare at her.

(Wh-What should i do ~~~~ ??? He-He likes Shamoe ? That means, That means.. !)  
(Shamoe)

Shamoe’s eyes are rolling and something like a steam is floating from her head while her face is red like a tomato.

(What a weird girl, everyone on this mansion is a weirdo.) (Hiiro) (TL Note : Donkan Protagonists are Donkan.)

Unable to understand Shamoe’s wild delusion, Hiiro looked up at <Forbidden Emperor Cloud> and wondering when the rain will stop.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 76

### Contract with a Demon?

---

Three days had passed in the manor. During that time, he befriended Silva and Shamoe, and got to know Liliyn a bit better. According to Silva, she usually stayed in her room, relying on him to bring her her meals.

(Haa, seems like Akaloli was wrong, the rain doesn't show any signs of stopping.....)

Within these three days, there was no sign of the rain letting go. If it rained continuously for such a long time, Hiiro though the river might overflow. However, Silva assured him that was not the case.

The reason was that, the monsters living in the lake were absorbing the Red Rain. It was raining continuously right now but there was a point in the past where there was no rain at all.

Being dry seemed to hurt the monsters. Since the rain provided them with energy, they literally regarded it as a blessed rain.

However, to people, this was one of the most annoying events that could occur. As one could not step outside, even without Liliyn present, all one could do was stay muffled in their rooms as they ate and slept.

(This is a waste of time. I originally wanted to practice my 《Word Magic》, but I can't use magic right now...it's like I'm in a prison.) (Hiiro)

Hiiro was obviously dissatisfied at first. Yet, in actuality, the mansion was filled with books and literature that Silva had collected, appeasing Hiiro's boredom. Hiiro deemed the books in Silva's collection as intriguing, especially the books detailing topics related to the Demon World. Thus, he enjoyed himself as he read through them.

At first, he was handed a book recommended by Silva. However, as it was clearly one of those books that the Perverted Butler often had, Hiiro immediately smacked the pervert over the head with it.

As Hiiro was in the guest room, absorbed in his reading, he heard the sound of a door slowly opening. If the visitor was Silva or Shamoe, then they would definitely knock before hand. Thus, he understood that his visitor was the only other existence that resided in the mansion.

Shifting his gaze towards the opened door, he predictably saw a face that he had not seen in a while.

“Lend me your face.” (Liliyn)

With her blazing red hair, Liliyn swayed as she spoke in a commanding tone.

“I refuse.” (Hiiro)

He instantly gave his rejection. However, perhaps expecting such an answer from Hiiro, Liliyn did not grow too upset as she continued.

“Kukuku, I see you haven’t changed much. Being able to face me with that kind of attitude, I mean.” (Liliyn)

“I’m reading. Don’t bother me, Hikikomori.” (Hiiro)

“Fun, forget about that and come. I wanna show you something interesting.” (Liliyn)

“...?” (Hiiro)

Hearing the words ‘something interesting,’ Hiiro’s curiosity was piqued.

“What’s so interesting?” (Hiiro)

“Like I said, if you follow you’ll find out.” (Liliyn)

“.....” (Hiiro)

The two’s eyes met. As Liliyn averted her eyes soon after, all the while emitting a fearless grin, Hiiro shut the book with a \*pata\*.

“Where are we going?” (Hiiro)

“Over here.” (Liliyn)

Hiiro followed after Liliyn who had left the room. However, he noticed something

suddenly drop to his feet as he exited the guest room. As he glanced at Liliyn's back, he picked up the object at his feet.

(This is...) (Hiiro)

Hiiro saw something resembling golden petals.

(The 《Golden Rose》 ...huh?)

In the fight earlier with the Baron Bone Lizard, Liliyn had consumed the 《Golden Rose》. This piece may have fallen out of her clothing when she had passed this spot. As Hiiro thought thus, for whatever reason, he concealed it in his pocket as he followed after Liliyn who was walking ahead.

They had entered a dimly lit room, a room that Liliyn would refer to as her own.

(This room has really bad taste, huh.) (Hiiro)

As he saw several creepy masks and ornaments lined up along the walls, Hiiro shrugged his shoulders. In the center of the room was a large magic circle drawn on the floor, a lone bed sitting on top of it. On top of said bed, Liliyn quietly sat down and stared at Hiiro.

"I heard that your hobby is reading." (Liliyn)

Hiiro interpreted this as her most likely hearing this from Silva.

"Right now, I've been arranging time to decipher a certain book." (Liliyn)

"A certain book you say?" (Hiiro)

"That's right. Well, I give you permission to look." (Liliyn)

As Liliyn said thus, she took a singular book out from under her pillow. The book, wrapped in a pitch black hardcover, appeared to not have anything resembling a title

written on it.

“This was a book that I obtained through several connections but, here. Have a read.”  
(Liliyn)

As she said thus, Liliyn threw the book towards Hiiro. Catching it with both hands, Hiiro first began to check the front and back covers. As he had thought, there was no trace of a title written anywhere. As such, he had no clue as to what the contents of the book were.

For the time being, Hiiro decided to check the contents of the book, his eyes involuntarily widening as he opened the book. Seeing Hiiro's expression, Liliyn's gaze sharpened as she stared at him. Of course, Hiiro was oblivious to this.

“This is...why is such a thing in this world...?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro unconsciously muttered in surprise. Of course, this was to be expected. This was because the contents of the book contained words that should not exist in this world.

“...Japanese.” (Hiiro)

Indeed, it was precisely as Hiiro had said. The characters written in the book was undoubtedly the native language of Hiiro's birth place, Japan.

“As I thought.” (Liliyn)

Upon hearing Liliyn's words, Hiiro looked towards her. He immediately regretted his actions.

“Boy, I had thought that you didn't seem like someone born in the Demon World. No...you're not even a native of 【Edea】 ...right?” (Liliyn)

As she gave of an eerie smile, a dubious light shone within the depths of her eyes.

(Damn...what the hell did I just say...?) (Hiiro)

As he was too unaware, he did not remember what he had said that was so significantly bad. However, from the current atmosphere, he could grasp that he had spoken something that caused even more problems for him.

“You can read that, right?” (Liliyn)

Hiiro threw back the book as he made his usual poker face.

“What are you talking about? I was just so instinctively appalled by how messy those words were.” (Hiiro)

Certainly, the black book was filled with scribbles. Reading it, one could tell that the characters were quirky. It could easily be called ‘messy writing’. However, seeing through Hiiro’s excuse, Liliyn’s smirk as her amusement was overflowing.

“Don’t bother, boy.” (Liliyn)

Saying thus, she took out a flower from her pouch. It was a charming flower that closely resembled a tulip, yet, its size was so small that it would fit neatly within her hand.

“This is called a 《Voice Flower》. It’s effect is...” (Liliyn)

Liliyn began to pour magic into the flower. Following this-

“This is...why is such a thing in this world...? ...Japanese.” (Voice Flower)

Hiiro clenched his fist and gritted his teeth. He never thought that he would have his voice recorded. What he had heard from the flower was undoubtedly his own voice. It was most likely the words that he had just spoke. If it wasn’t, then it would be impossible for the word 『Japanese』 to appear.

(This brat, she was aiming for this since the beginning...) (Hiiro)

Hihiro glared intently at Liliyn, however, she simply dismissed it as if it were a passing breeze as she continued.

“Well, there’s no need to make such a face. I don’t really care who you are. I have no intention of spreading this either. The only thing that I am interested in is purely you yourself.” (Liliyn)

“...” (Hihiro)

“Because you seem ignorant about the ways of this world, I somehow knew that you were not of this world, that you were of a completely different world, you know? Also, that ‘Jya-pa-nees’ word. That’s either this book’s title, or the general term used for the words written in it...am I wrong?” (Liliyn)

Hihiro thought that she was an intelligent fellow as he clicked his tongue in his innermost thoughts. If Arnold was here, he would easily be able to deceive her. Yet, it seemed that he was up against the wrong opponent.

“Those words couldn’t be deciphered by anyone that I’ve met before. In other words, those characters do not belong to this world. There was also a hero summoning in the past. The hero was a savior belonging to another world. Furthermore, I heard that recently, a Hero Summoning took place in the 『Humas』 Continent. You...are you a hero?” (Liliyn)

Liliyn asked as her eyes sparkled with a \*kirakira\*, shining with the light of intrigue.

“I’m pretty sure I have no obligation to answer, you know?” (Hihiro)

“Kukuku, certainly you have no obligation to. I just want to know. Then how about this. Name anything you desire. As compensation for fulfilling your wish, tell me about you.” (Liliyn)

She reached her hand out towards Hihiro. An unpleasant sensation ran throughout his whole body, a sensation that seemed as if he were making a deal with the devil. Even if he thought it was his imagination, it was not entirely false. The girl in front of his eyes was certainly a little girl, no. What held the appearance of a little girl was actually a cunning individual that had lived tens of Hihiro’s life span.

However, as the situation was so one-sided, Hihiro felt uneasy. He had an idea to pierce the current silence, however, he was drawn by the words promising to fulfill his desire. He began to think of how to take maximum advantage of her proposal.

From what he had gathered from Silva and Shamoe, Hiiro understood that she was certainly not the type of person who would willingly spread information about others. Because of this, he particularly thought that her ideas were very exaggerated.

“...I got it. Then first, listen to my request.” (Hiiro)

“Kukuku, very well.” (Liliyn)

Hearing Hiiro’s words, her face brightened as she returned a light nod.

“State anything you desire. Even if you were to say you desired my body, I wouldn’t mind, you know?” (Liliyn)

Seeing Liliyn jokingly declare thus, Hiiro glared at her with half-opened eyes.

“As if I would be interested in such a flat body.” (Hiiro)

She was cut down and disposed of in a single strike.

“F...flat...you say...” (Liliyn)

As if she had received a considerable amount of shock, her body trembled with a \*furufuru\*.

“T-this...even though he’s just a lowly boy...I’ll pulverise your brain into mush...” (Liliyn)

Although Liliyn’s words were drenched with murderous intent, Hiiro was unconcerned as he opened his mouth.

“I want the admission permit to the 【Fortuna Grand Library】.” (Liliyn)

“I won’t be satiated just by simply killing him...I’ll keep him alive as I show him hell...wait, what’d you say?” (Liliyn)

“Like I said, I want the admission permit to the 【Fortuna Grand Library】 . Not just that, but the highest level clearance.” (Hiiro)

“...when you say the highest level, are you saying that you want to view the literature in 《Basement 5》 which requires certificates issued by the royal family?”

“That’s right. Prohibited books and archaic manuscripts, there seems to be lots of interesting things there, doesn’t it?” (Hiiro)

“...hey, boy. I don’t know whether you’re aware of this, but those that are allowed to view the literature in 《Basement 5》 mostly comprise of only royalty. Even if they gave permits to the public, the chances of obtaining one would be extremely slim.” (Liliyn)

“Aa, it’s precisely because of this that I’m saying I want to obtain such a permit.” (Hiiro)

“...you. Have you ever been told before that you’re very bossy?” (Liliyn)

“I’ll return those words straight back to you.” (Hiiro)

Although they maintained a deadlock with their eyes for a while, the first to break it was Liliyn.

“...haa. Why are you going that far? What’s your goal?” (Liliyn)

“The hell’re you saying? Books are things that are meant to be read. It’s not something made to be stored away in a dark place. I’m travelling all around the world trying to read all the books I can.” (Hiiro)

“Hou, so it’s just simple curiosity, huh?” (Liliyn)

“Got a problem?” (Hiiro)

“No...” (Liliyn)

She grinned happily as she continued to speak.

“However, it’d be good if that curiosity didn’t destroy you someday.” (Liliyn)

“I won’t die. Therefore, it’s fine.” (Hiiro)

“Wha...pu-! Kuhahahahahahaha! As I thought, you’re definitely interesting! How about it, do you really have no intention of becoming mine!?” (Liliyn)

“You’re so repetitive. I have no intention of becoming yours.” (Hiiro)

“Kukuku, well, that’ll probably change in due time. People change. I’ll bring you to your knees someday with my charm.” (Liliyn)

“That day will definitely not come.” (Hiiro)

“Kukuku, we’ll see about that.” (Liliyn)

Saying thus, Liliyn opened the drawer of a shelf that had vials placed on top of it. Taking out something from the drawer, she threw it over to Hiiro with a \*hyoi\*. Luckily, Hiiro caught it as he confirmed what it was.

It was a singular piece of card that had her name written on it. Upon closer inspection, the words 【Fortuna】 were written, with a golden mark pressed onto it.

“That’s the admission permit. Furthermore, it’s the one you requested, the one with the highest level clearance.” (Liliyn)

“This is...huh.” (Hiiro)

Although he told his request half-heartedly, knowing that it was a desire that was unlikely to be fulfilled, as he unceremoniously obtained the permit, he was obviously surprised. Because of this, he began to wonder even more as to the identity of the person before his eyes.

As she had indicated earlier, those that possess the permit for 《Basement 5》 mainly consisted of royalty. And yet, she had one such permit in her possession. Knowing that this fact alone should be enough to startle anyone, Liliyn boasted as she puffed her chest out in pride, wearing a merry smile.

(Even though she said to state any desire, I had no expectations as I told her. Talk about a stroke of good luck.) (Hiiro)

In regards to favours, Hiiro had another one in stock. If that one was unable to be granted then Hiiro would have determined that negotiations had broke down, causing him to immediately depart from this place. However, as he had been disappointed in a good way, the fact that Hiiro was puzzled was undeniably true.

This proved the extent of how difficult it was for a normal person to be able to obtain

the 【Fortuna Grand Library's】 highest level permit.

The 【Fortuna Grand Library】 was a library that's located in the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】. It's collection of literature was unparalleled in this world. It was also known as the 《Fountain of Knowledge》. It's said that no matter what problem you have, the answer would be slumbering within its walls.

『Humas』, 『Gabranth』, 『Evila』, 『Pheom』. The library has achieved the gathering and collection of literature from all the continents. However, the library works on a permit system. In order to gain entry, one must obtain permission from both the library director, and the country.

The library has two upper levels and four basements. As one goes lower, the books housed become more important, thus, it becomes even harder to gain access to them.

Basically, 『Evila』 usually apply for a permit for 《Basement 1》, a descending floor that often holds books that are commonly sold elsewhere. Floors even lower than 《Basement 2》 and 《Basement 3》 require not just permission from the head librarian, but the country as well. In other words, there are floors that require permission from the Royal Family to access.

One of which was the floor known as 《Basement 5》, a floor where books that were never revealed to the general populace are stored. Hihiro definitely wanted to read such books.

However, upon hearing this story, Hihiro began worrying about how he would obtain access to such a place. Although he could use 《Word Magic》 to attempt to sneak in like a shinobi, if possible, he wanted to peacefully gain access to such a location. Thus, he took up Liliyn's offer without giving it much thought.

It was a happy miscalculation that she happened to have a permit. Furthermore, it was a permit of the highest level. He had slightly viewed her as the goddess of luck, however, he decided not to voice this out.

(This brat....no, she's a hag, huh. Really, who in the world is she...) (Hihiro)

Quite unlike himself, Hihiro slightly felt curious about Liliyn herself. Oblivious to such thoughts of his, Liliyn began to speak.

"According to the contract, I've given you a means of entering 【Fortuna】. That's why, next, listen to my demands."

Hihiro stared at Liliyn as he placed his hand on his chin. Silence shortly followed.

(I better make use of what I can...huh.) (Hihiro)

Thinking as such, Hihiro quietly opened his mouth.

“...if it’s just hearing you out then I’ll listen.” (Hihiro)

Upon hearing Hihiro’s words, Liliyn once again showed a broad smile.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 77 New Traveling Companions

---

“As I’ve already said before, the only people in this room are you and me. There’s no way for other people to overhear us. Therefore, you’re free to tell me.” (Liliyn)

“You’ve taken some pretty meticulous preparations, huh?” (Hiiro)

The whole purpose of beckoning Hiiro into her room was for this. Primarily because she was so interested in him. Specifically, she was interested in the rare magic known as [Word Magic].

“First off, seeing that you can read that book, are you really not a Hero?” (Liliyn)

“Aah, I’m not a hero” (Hiiro)

“……let me rephrase that, do you know what a Hero is?” (Liliyn)

As she threw a curveball of a question at Hiiro, he wondered as to why she had such a profound interest in them.

“Can I ask you something first?” (Hiiro)

“Nh? What?” (Liliyn)

“Why are you so interested in Heroes?” (Hiiro)

“Fu~n, a person summoned from another world is much more interesting compared to those living in a boring society.” (Liliyn)

“…Boring? A war almost started a little while ago, you know?” (Hiiro)

The threat of an outbreak of war was still present.

“I’m not interested in war. The history of humanity is the history of war. I’ve lived for a very long time. Do you really think I’ve maintained no contact with war?” (Liliyn)

Analyzing what she just said, Hiiro could assume that she had lived for such a long period of time that she has probably lived through and witnessed numerous wars. There was also a chance that she had participated in them as well. Hiiro presumed that this was most likely the reason why war did not appeal to her.

(Well, if she were one of those war-hungry people then it would be a pain.) (Hiiro)

Hiiro was relieved that the girl before him held no interest in it. If she was, he might have gotten caught up in the war.

“You say you’re not a Hero, but you aren’t a resident of Edea, right?” (Liliyn)

“…Haah, it doesn’t seem to be any harm in telling you…but make sure not to tell anyone else, okay?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro wanted to confirm this for the second time.

“You know, I’ve already said it several times before. Do I look like a person who would foolishly spread information?” (Liliyn)

Hiiro stared at her for a bit. She made a displeased expression with her mouth and eyebrows. Looking at such a face, his expectations dropped. He felt like he was talking to a child.

It was true that she had the same preferences as him. As long as her curiosity was satiated, she was satisfied. In addition, she did not seem like someone who would recklessly share what she knew.

Concerning the risks, Hiiro could feel that if he answered her barrage of questions, his secrets would not spread to the rest world. She, like Hiiro, was also a user of Unique Magic. It was probable that she would be considerably capable of sympathizing with him. Although overly optimistic, Hiiro felt that after advancing this far, it wouldn’t be a bad idea to just tell her everything.

“I understand. However, I will only tell you once.” (Hiiro)

“What? Why?” (Liliyn)

“If you don’t like it, I’ll talk more after I confirm that this is real.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro showed her the permit to the [Fortuna Grand Library] as he said so.

“Really! Do you think what I gave you is fake?” (Liliyn)

“No, I’m not sure. I don’t know what the real thing looks like. I don’t want to be a fish lured in by fake bait.” (Hiiro)

Right after he said it, he took out from his pocket a golden petal; a golden petal that he picked up on his way into the room. When Liliyn saw it, her eyes opened wide.

“I’ve had enough of it…of your deceit.” (Hiiro)

She gritted her teeth and scowled at the smirking Hiiro. Her expression changed to a grin soon after.

“Kukuku, you’re an interesting brat. I’ll tell you what, I’ll pretend that I didn’t hear anything.” (Liliyn)

“Hm? Are you okay with that?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro scowled involuntarily at the surprising response.

“Yes, it would much more interesting to observe and find out everything about you.”  
(Liliyn)

“...isn’t that bad character?” (Hiiro)

“Kukuku, what’re you talking about? Did you think I was a good person?” (Liliyn)

“I couldn’t care less whether you’re a good person or a bad one.” (Hiiro)

“Kuhaha, well said. You are becoming more and more interesting. Alright then. Let’s declare it here.” (Liliyn)

“.....?” (Hiiro)

Liliyn intently pointed her finger at Hiiro.

“I’ll definitely make you mine. Just you wait.” (Liliyn)

She said with an insatiable curiosity, her pupil’s shining like a child who had just found a new toy. Seeing such an expression, Hiiro made the blunder of finding it interesting as well.

Hiiro smiled and replied.

“If you think you can, then prove it to me.” (Hiiro)

He stated it as if a game was about start. He began to feel a sense of comfort. It was different than the comfort he felt with Arnold and Muir. In all honesty, Hiiro needed to be alert when interacting with Liliyn, yet, he involuntarily found it interesting.

(Also, if I acquaint myself with someone like her, she could become a source of strength or power in the future.)

Although it was the same during his interactions with Rarashik, as he was mostly dancing around atop of Liliyn’s palm, Hiiro’s anxiety couldn’t help but build up. It was mainly because she was a strong individual that he couldn’t afford to lower his guard around her, Hiiro was betting on using her as a source of growth for him to get even stronger.

“Well then, I’ll return this to you” (Hiiro)

Hiiro tossed the permit back at Liiliyn who caught it expertly as he proceeded to leave the room.

Liliyn took the permit and played with it for a bit before smiling. Following this, she returned the permit to its original location. However, something strange occurred as she did so.

Earlier, when Hiiro had looked at the permit, it was clear that the permit had the highest clearance level, the "Basement 5" gold mark printed on it. However, the permit for some reason, returned to a silver color.

She looked at the petals that Hiiro had dropped on the ground as she exhaled.

(Kukuku, it going to get busy now) (Liliyn)

A pair of crimson red eyes glowed suspiciously in the dim room.

The day after she talked with Hiiro, she gathered everyone in the room first thing in the morning as she made her declaration.

"Lets go on a journey" (Liliyn)

Hiiro was unsurprised with the announcement since he expected it after last night. However, the same could not be said for the other two. Silva stared at them with a stunned expression as Shamoe cried out.

"Fu~e~e~e~e~e?" (Shamoe)

She was completely startled.

"What are you so surprised about?" (Liliyn)

"I-I-I-I'm very surprised. W-W-why are we suddenly going on a journey?" (Shamoe)

It was a natural question for Shamoe. But Liliyn had a neutral expression as she moved her mouth.

"Un, the reason is, I'll be joining that person on his journey." (Liliyn)

"H-Hihiro-sama's...." (Shamoe)

"Un!" (Liliyn)

Suddenly Silva opened his eyes wide and-

"Mumumu!" (Silva)

-bellowed thus.

“Master, there is no way! You already have me, yet, you have fallen for Hihiro-sama? Please say it is not so! If you are ever lonely, you will always have a man with an overflowingly passionate soul and throbbing heart to embrace you.” (Silva)

“As if-!” (Liliyn)

“Bu-gyo-wa?” (Silva)

Irritated by Silva’s complete misunderstanding, she dropped kicked him on the head, making him crumple onto the ground.

“S-Silva-sama” (Shamoe)

Shamoe grew flustered as she tried to deal with the current spectacle. Liliyn folded her arms, exhaling as she spoke.

“Listen up, I made a deal with that person. The contents of that deal, however, are a secret.” (Liliyn)

The contents weren’t that important, however, she was told not to talk about it so she planned on doing just that.

“Because of the deal, I have no choice but to follow that person to his destination.”

“W-where is that place” (Shamoe)

Shamoe asked anxiously.

“Demon Continent, Xaos.” (Liliyn)

Upon hearing that name, Silva stood up vigorously as he looked at Liliyn with glistening eyes.

“N-no, you mustn’t go there!” (Silva)

“W-what is it all of a sudden?” (Liliyn)

Liliyn was also caught by surprise when the invincible butler suddenly resurrected.

“Don’t go. Don’t go. Please don’t go! Please don’t go to that place...[Xaos]” (Silva)

The other three looked at the heated old man.

“That place is a city! You are aware, yes? It is a place with lots of people! In such a place, what do you think would happen to a lazy, sheltered, cute and beautiful princess?” (Silva)

Although there seemed to be some hidden intention there, they all remained silent for the time being and listened.

“If you were to wander into such a big place, there is a chance that you would get lost. Using that opportunity, a low life would approach you and then take you to some isolated ally and...and bufufofo!” (Silva)

To everyone’s surprise, a red substance began to flow out of Silva’s nose for some reason.

“Ku..no...nofofo...this isn’t good.” (Silva)

“What isn’t good is this pervert!” (Liliyn)

“A-cho-bu-rin!?” (Silva)

The answer was quite clear. It would be better to leave this perverted old man behind.

With a wonderful uppercut by Liliyn, the perverted old man’s head buried itself into the ceiling.

(This place is definitely chaotic) (Hiiro)

The butler in particular.....

(There was no way someone who’s at Level 148 would be taken out so easily by a guy.) (Hiiro)

She would definitely turn the tables on that person.

Liliyn dusted off her hands (Pan-Pan) and continued.

“The Red rain has weakened. It is likely that it will cease tonight. We should be able to depart so make your preparations. Also, that person (Silva) is abnormal. Shamoe, please crush his bones and grind it into bird feed.” (Liliyn)

“Eh, Ah, Yes! ... Ah, no, I mean...” (Shamoe)

The maid was unsure as to what she should do. The butler had his head buried in the ceiling. The little girl who only moved straight towards her goals.

(Going on a journey with these people.....it’s depressing.)

When he went to Liliyn's room, no matter whether the permit was real or fake, this would still be the result. Even if it was fake, he would have to no choice but to take the permit to the [Demon Continent, Xaos] to complete the deal.

Also, even if it was real, he would not be able to use the permit without her presence. He could do something with [Word Magic], like copy the permit. However, it would be suspicious for a normal person to have such a permit in the first place.

He could disguise himself as Liliyn and use the permit. However, if the permit was fake, he wouldn't be able to do anything. He thought of lots of other things on his mind, but he would only use force if all else failed.

As she was so interested in him, Hihiro determined that she could either restrain him or accompany him on his journey. The possibility of either was quite high. Hihiro had made preparations as he heard Silva say that Liliyn excelled in brute force.

From the deal last night, he understood why she wanted to go on a journey with him. Also, if she went with him, it was clear that the other two would follow as well. That was because, for some reason, both Shamoe and Silva relied on her.

Three more people would become troublesome. Hihiro liked journeying alone. However, since coming to this world, he thought that travelling with others were not bad at all.

Arnold, Muir, and now Mikazuki. Although it was certainly good to travel alone, it was definitely more interesting to travel with another person.

There are a lot of things that Hihiro didn't know about the Demon continent. Liliyn and the other two would probably know a lot about the continent. Learning about them during the journey would become major asset later on.

(If something happens, I can always use the word [Transfer] to escape right away.)  
(Hihiro)

[Word Magic] had a wide range of applications.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 78 The Attendant's Concerns

---

That night, While Hiiro was sleeping, there was a knock on the door. And when he answered it turned out to be Silva.

"Can we speak for a moment?" (Silva)

"Sure, just make it quick." (Hiiro)

"Yes!" (Silva)

Hiiro sat on the sofa, while Silva served some tea.

"Well, what do you want?" (Hiiro)

"I'm extremely sorry." (Silva) \*(I Deeply apologize.) {sounds more butler like.}

Silva suddenly bowed his head. Hiiro didn't understand and tilted his head to the side.

"What do you mean?" (Hiiro)

"It's about Ojou-sama." (Silva)

.....{who is doing this Hiiro, Silva or Both??}

"I thought you got forced." (Silva)

"Ah, that uh.." (Hiiro)

It's look like she threatened Hiiro to join her on his journey.

"Ojou-sama is a person like that, once she found something interesting, she will take it no matter what." (Silva)

"That's true. I understand that." (Hiiro)

"But, if it's really troublesome, you should go now when Ojou-sama is sleeping." (Silva)

"Oi..." (Hiiro)

Hearing Hiiro interrupting him, Silva had a blank face.

"Wh-What's the matter?" (Silva)

“Even though I have no intention to go with that baba ...no, Akaloli. It’s not that I got forced against my will you know? Well, though it’s true that she insisted a bit.”(Hiiro)

“Is-Is that so?”(Silva)

“Yeah, we already agreed. That’s why jii-san doesn’t have to worry, or, shouldn’t you have some confidence?” (Hiiro)

“Nofofofo, I am confident, but, it’s just that Ojou-sama can’t see other people’s circumstances and normally force something on them against their will.”(Silva)

“True.”(Hiiro)

“It’s also due to the fact that Ojou-sama lives in such a remote place.”(Silva)

“Eh.. Is that so?”(Hiiro)

Basically, this mansion is used so that she didn’t bring trouble to others..

“I don’t think that’s admirable though.”(Hiiro)

“Nofofofofo, even though Ojou-sama looks like that, she is also kind you know?”(Hiiro)

Seeing Silva smiling like this, rather than a servant, he seems more like a father.

“Since she has lived for such a long time, she has had to go through sweet and bitter times, and has a lot of experience because of it.”(Silva)

It is true that being a level 148 surely means she cannot be half-assed in experiences. Just like he said, she should have lots of experience.

From the standpoint of life experiences, Hiiro can’t even compare.

“Aside from that, there is another reason why this mansion is built here, a BIG REASON.”(Silva)

“Oh...?”(Hiiro)

“Like I have mentioned before, this place is full of weird and eccentric people. This building is also built for those who have lost their homes.”(Silva)

“Like her huh..”(Hiiro)

“That’s right.”(Silva)

It’s true that Silva mentioned something about this being a place with weird and eccentric people. But, I didn’t think it was built for that purpose.

“Actually, I’m a <Spirit>”(Silva) {Rather sudden lol}

“...”(Hiiro)

“I’m sorry that I kept silent about this before, but now that we are going to be traveling together, this is a courtesy.”(Silva)

“Is that so..”(Hiiro)

Though Hiiro already had known this beforehand, since he used “Pry” (覗) on him, he nod out of respect for his feelings.

“And, as you already know, Shamoe is <Magical Beast>. It’s hard to live in this land.”(Silva)

“I see. So that is why she built this building.”(Hiiro)

Hiiro said that while looking around the room. Silva nodded.

“Even so, there have been no guests for a long time. Though, monsters still come.”(Silva)

Silva said that with a lonely face

“Well, though I think the problem is the location.”(Hiiro)

Well, it is the truth that this place is surrounded by lake. A better place surely exists.

“Nofofofo, that’s right. But, Ojou-sama took a liking to this place.”(Silva)

“Why?”(Hiiro)

“Because the abnormal is more cool to her.”(Silva)

“Is she an idiot or something?”(Hiiro)

I really wonder if she lost her mind or something else entirely.

“Nofofofo, an ordinary person like me can’t understand Ojou-sama’s interests.”(Silva)

“No no no, it’s simply because she is simply too weird.”(Hiiro)

Seeing Hiiro say that while simply sighing, Silva smiled and said,

“Nofofofo, she likes your straight-forward approach you know?” (Silva)

"I don't care." (Hiiro)

"Nofofofo, Since she always sticks with her decision, she got stuck here. Though, as expected, no one came."(Silva)

"True."(Hiiro)

"Ojou-sama is helplessly bored. She always told me to go travel on impossible quests for fun."(Silva)

"Ahh, so that mountain huh.."(Hiiro)

Now that I think of it, It was obvious that Silva was moving by Liliyn's order.

"It's not only that though. But, Ojou-sama eventually got bored with that too."(Silva)

"..."(Hiiro)

"That time, when Hiiro-sama came."(Silva)

"What a coincidence." (Hiiro)

"Nope, more than a coincidence, from the start, I already intend to invite you."(Silva)

Hearing that, Hiiro narrowed his eyebrow.

"oh really now?" (Hiiro)

"Yes, I immediately could tell that Hiiro-sama is not normal."(Silva)

"I see... <Spirit>'s skill huh. Are you from observing race?"(Hiiro)

"Nofofofo, as expected, you truly knew. I presume, you have met another <Pheom>?"  
(Silva)

"That is the question."(Hiiro)

"Nofofofo, that's a shame. But, even in the realm of <Spirit>, I'm not normal."(Silva)

"Hm?"(Hiiro)

"Normally, <Pheom> do not have the power to observe."(Silva)

"I guess that's true. If it was true, you would have known immediately that I'm not from <Imp Race>, and see through my identity." (Hiiro)

The <Spirit> I met before saw through my beast appearance. If Silva were to possess that power, it would be the same. But, since he didn't, I suppose he didn't have it.

"Due to many circumstances, the eccentric me ended up here." (Silva)

"A Pervert right?" (Hiiro)

"Nofofofo, that's harsh you know. Nofofofo." (Silva)

"Well, after I got here, I'm wondering if there's something." (Hiiro)

"Is that so? But, that is Hiiro-sama himself is the one that makes the bored Ojou-sama that has been holed up here become cheerful again." (Silva)

"Oi, I didn't do anything though?" (Hiiro)

"No no, Even Shamoe had the same thought. She who was a despised existence by <Evila>, can talk with you. She would have approved of it too." (Silva)

"You sure praise me a lot." (Hiiro)

Hearing Silva say that so seriously, it made it somewhat awkward, While Hiiro averted his eyes, trying not to make anymore misunderstandings, Hiiro drank the tea.

"It's nothing. It seems I have taken a lot of time. I'm sorry." (Silva)

"That's true, but, is that person alright there?" (Hiiro)

A voice saying "Fueeee" could be heard. Silva opened his eyes wide for a second and smiled. (TL Note : Rishia !! XD ) [Editor note: Like Totally man]

"Oh...um, I'm busted?" (Shamoe)

"Obviously." (Hiiro)

"That's because.." (Shamoe)

GAZAGAZAGAZAFURUFURUFURU{sound of the door shaking}

The room's door is unnaturally shaking.

"There's no way to ignore it." (Hiiro)

"Nofofofo, Shamoe, you can come in you know?" (Silva)

Hearing that, Shamoe opened the door and peek inside. (SFX : Giii)

She just passed by chance and overheard Silva's voice. She tried to eavesdrop, but it seems she got busted a while ago.

When she heard the conversation, she touched the door and it began to shake. She tried to hold it, and it seems it gave her away. Though the last part is why she got busted.

"A-Ah, Th-That was.. Eh-Eh, Sorry for eavesdropping!" (Shamoe)

She bowed her head vigorously. It's not like that Hihiro mind eavesdropping, and he didn't blame anyone.

"Don't mind it. That aside, are you alright?" (Hihiro)

"Fuuee?" (Shamoe)

"We're going to <Evila> Capital. There will be alot of them." (Hihiro)

She already experienced her home being destroyed by <Evila> Though it's unlikely she will meet the same people, there are alots of them. They might be from the same race that banished her.

Hihiro thought that having that kind of experience would be trauma when she met other <Evila>

But, while he was thinking that, She's wearing a smile.

"Th-Thank you very much! But, Shamoe's home is beside Silva and Ojou-sama. If they want to go, I must go too!" (Shamoe)

"Nofofofo, it means she's also prepared." (Silva)

"It seems so." (Hihiro)

It seems it's decided, that we will all go together.

"Hihiro-sama, this might be sudden, but, as comrade, please take care of me!" (Shamoe)

"Wait. What do you mean by comrade?!" (Hihiro)

"Mumumu, of course as our beloved Ojou-sama's fanclub!" (Silva)

"....." (Hihiro)

"As comrade!" (Shamoe)

....(Hiiro)

“As a com-“(Sliva)

“Stop it!”(Hiiro)

“Boronbi !?”(Silva) [EdN: Do not fully get what it means, but sounds funny]

Silva is given a short flight courtesy of a kick from Hiiro.

“Geez, it seems I really need to leave that jiji”(Hiiro)

“Fueeeee~”(Shamoe)

Shamoe was flustered as usual, and Silva also revived quickly as usual and now is saying. [EdN: Masochist spirit butler well well.]

“Nofofofo, looks like it’s gonna be fun now! Nofofofofo!”(Silva)

“Haa... I thought I died.”(Silva){not sure}

“A-Ah, Hiiro-sama!”(Shamoe)

“Hm?”(Hiiro)

“Sh-Shamoe also!”(Shamoe)

“Ahh...”(Hiiro)

“I-I will bring new batch of tea, okay?” (Shamoe)

Looking at her greeting desperately, he already thought to leave her from the start. Suddenly,

“Fueeee?!”(Shamoe)

~Gashan!

“Bunii!”(Shamoe)

She stumbled forward and magnificently dropped the pot on the bed.

“Awawawawawa, I-I’m sorry ! Sh-Shamoe is idiot, idiot, idiot, idiot!”(Shamoe)

While she’s hitting her own head, her breast shake and Silva was looking at them dangerously.{Editor note: Pervert is as pervert does.]

(I should think of a plan to get out of here in tonight night...)

While he was think of this chaotic situation being an everyday occurance, Hiiro felt like a heavy burden was placed on him.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 79

### And now, towards the Journey

---

Liliyn: 「Now, let's get a move on you lot!」

The following day, Liliyn frolicked as if she were an extremely energetic good girl. She pointed towards the other side of the lake as her back faced the mansion.

As she had indicated, the rain seemed to have stopped during the middle of the night. At the present time, the figure of the 《Forbidden Emperor Cloud》 that loomed over them in the sky was nowhere to be seen. If one were to compare this day to the previous, the current skies were cloudless, as if the storm had been a lie.

Not only had the weather turned fine after such a long time, but they were also going to be embarking on a journey. In light of this, Liliyn's mood became ecstatic. Although this was not the first time she had gone on a journey, she did not have a reason to travel until now. In other words, there was nothing that had piqued her interest significantly enough to motivate her to go out on an excursion.

However, at the present time, there was the presence of who Liliyn had declared as an 'Unusual Visitor', Hiiro. Hiiro, in and of himself, was the exact definition of unknown. At first, she was determined to learn about Hiiro by any means, even if she had to resort to brute force. However, in light of their exchange the other day, she began to think that drawing out the answers all at once and then have him leave would be such a shame.

As she had never formed such thoughts before, she was bewildered, yet, she also felt comfortable for some reason. It is precisely because of this that, in order for her to continue enjoying this sensation longer, she wanted to discern the answers for herself by observing Hiiro with her own eyes and ears on this journey.

Hiiro: 「It's fine if you want to go, but what're you gonna do about the mansion? Well, no matter what you want to do, I guess you can only just leave it be, huh.」

However, Liliyn's following sentence caused Hiiro to express shock, his eyes widening as far as they could go.

Liliyn: 「What are you saying? Isn't it obvious that we're bringing it along with us.」

Hiiro: 「.....ha?」

While Hiiro wondered what the hell this girl was saying, he began to doubt his own ears as he assumed that what he had heard was mistaken. Thus, he began to ask for confirmation.

Hiiro: 「O-Oi<sup>(1)</sup>, what did you just say? You're going to...bring the mansion with you?」

Liliyn: 「Aa<sup>(2)</sup>, it's my possession. I have no intention of letting anyone do anything to it.」

It seems that his ears were not playing tricks on him. Nevertheless, this time, he began to question her sanity. A mansion was not food, nor was it a commodity. Even if one said that they wanted to bring it along, this task would immediately be deemed impossible.

Hiiro: 「Look, if you express such an extreme level of selfishness, I can only see you as a simpleton.」

Liliyn: 「Fun<sup>(3)</sup>, if you don't know anything that shut your mouth, boy. Do it, Silva.」

Silva: 「As you command.」

As he said thus, Silva stood in front of the mansion before kneeling and placing both hands onto the ground.

Hiiro: 「What're you trying to do?」

Liliyn: 「Well, just watch. You'll get to see something quite interesting.」

Liliyn conducted herself in a suggestive manner as she smirked. Following her proposal, Hiiro began to watch over Silva's actions.

Silva: 「Now I shall begin. Dark Gate!」

As he cast the spell, a black something began to spread out through the ground underneath both of his hands. Upon a singular glance, it was easy to identify the black something as a shadow.

\*Zuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuu.....!\*(4)

As the shadow began to grow bigger and bigger, it began to encompass the bottom of the mansion. In the following instance, the mansion began to shake with a \*gura\*(5).

Hiiro: (Oi, oi. Seriously...?)

As the mansion seemed to tilt slightly, it began to quickly sink. Yes, the mansion began to become swallowed by the shadows. In the blink of an eye, the mansion became buried in the vastly spread shadow, giving birth to a vacant lot.

Liliyn: 「Umu(6). As usual, he's such a useful fellow.」

As Liliyn folded her arms, she nodded contentedly.

Hiiro: (I see. According to my memory, Silva was a 『Spirit of Darkness』, wasn't he. I guess that means that what just occurred was the result of his magic. Even so, saying that they're going to bring it along. I guess they can store whatever they want with them, huh.)

It was most likely that they could take it out as well.

Hiiro: (It's certainly convenient. But I was showed some really good magic, huh.)

When using 《Word Magic》, imagination is essential. As he was shown Silva's magic with his own eyes, it had now become easier for Hiiro to produce the same effect with a corresponding word.

Hiiro: (A 'storage' word, huh.....I'll have to try it out later.)

In the meantime, Silva, who had just finished his duty, began to converse with Shamoe who had just returned.

Silva: 「Unfortunately, Shamoe, the garden would be quite...[\(7\)](#)」

Certainly, the flowers and crops that were being grown in the garden required care. If left alone, it would be reasonable to expect that, someday, they would wither and become useless. Although Silva's ability was indeed useful, it appeared to lack any refrigeration or heat insulation functions.

Shamoe: 「T-that's alright[\(8\)](#). I have already said my farewells to those children.」

She seemed to have already gave her partings to the flowers that she cherished and tenderly cared for.

Silva: 「Is that so? In which case, I am relieved.」

Shamoe: 「Yes!」

Liliyn: 「Oi, you two! If you're done then hurry it up! Silva, begin preparations for crossing the lake!」

Silva: 「As you command.」

As Silva responded thus, he approached the lake, his shadow once again spreading over the lake. However, instead of storing an item away, something emerged from the shadows. It was a singular vessel, a boat. The boat that had carried Hihiro previously had become ragged and worn out, thanks to the Red Rain, rendering it useless.

Liliyn: 「Now, let's set off!」

Liliyn, who seemed to be in a good mood, boarded the boat as she was being escorted by Silva. Even though Mikazuki was there, as the boat was quite large, they had just managed to fit everyone onto the boat.

As Silva confirmed that everyone had got on the boat, he began moving the oar in order to make the move forward. Upon inspection, the oar seemed quite heavy and difficult to handle. However, seeing Silva's unchanging, nonchalant complexion, Hihiro came to the conclusion that Silva was indeed a level 80 『Spirit』 .

Inherently, the 『Pheom』 were a race that preferred harmony and tended to avoid

conflict. As they were the race that possessed the most affinity with magic, their physical force, that is to say their brute strength tended to be quite poor, even when compared to other races.

However, as he had a level of 80, he should have obtained decent stats corresponding to such level. In addition, to be able to propel the boat forward with an oar in such heavy red water, all the while maintaining a collected composure indicated that such a difficult task was simple to him.

As they had directly crossed the lake without incident, the four people and one animal placed their feet on solid ground.

Liliyn: 「Well then, boy. The destination is the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 , however, have you decided on what route you're going to take?」

Liliyn asked thus.

Hiiro: 「No, I don't really have a particular route in mind. I just wanted to go explore around the Demon World. Also, it's not like that's the final destination. I was just thinking of stopping by should I encounter it by chance.」

Liliyn: 「What, you have no plan huh? Boring.」

Hiiro: 「To begin with, this is just a carefree journey. Things like a plan don't exist.」

In response to her manner of speaking, Hiiro grew slightly irritated. As Hiiro seemed to have slightly taken offense to her comment, he wanted to respond with an excuse. However, upon seeing her contrasting joy at his panic, he decided to keep his mouth shut.

Liliyn: 「Fumu<sup>(9)</sup>....in other words, you're in no hurry...as there are a few places that I want to go, should we just go there?」

Hiiro wasn't particularly going to object. As the Demon World was one which was unknown to him, he would make full use of their knowledge of said world. For Hiiro who wanted to look around the entire Demon World at least once, he was certainly appreciative of the guide supplied to him.

However, once he grew curious and asked as to where she wanted to go, Liliyn simply grinned and laughed as she answered.

Liliyn: 「The 『Imp Race's』 Village.」

Hiiro: 「.....」

‘This brat. How long is she gonna fuck<sup>(10)</sup> around with me.’ Hiiro began to grow frustrated as he thought thus. Although Hiiro was currently in his 『Imp』 form, he was originally human. Not to mention, the one who had revealed Hiiro was not an 『Imp』 the other day was none other than Liliyn.

If Hiiro were to visit a place where the real ones lived, the probability that various problems would arise were exceptionally high. After all, Hiiro was so ignorant of them that he was unaware of the 『Imp Race's』 weakness. If they were to investigate him, it would become quite troublesome.

Whether she had known this or not. No, as she had clearly known this and voiced such a proposal, Hiiro glared at her. However, upon seeing Hiiro's scowl, Liliyn happily accepted it as she emitted a large grin.

Liliyn: 「Kukuku<sup>(11)</sup>, I'm joking, I'm joking. It was a small joke of an adorable young maiden.」

Hiiro: 「Where is this young maiden, huh?」

Although Hiiro suppressed his habit of calling her a Baba<sup>(12)</sup>, Liliyn understood what it was the Hiiro tried to convey.

Liliyn: 「Ah? What'd you say, boy?」

\*Piki\*<sup>(13)</sup> A blue vein appeared on her forehead.

Silva: 「Well, well you two! How about I make a proposal?」

Hiiro | Liliyn: 「 「Nn?<sup>(14)</sup>」 」

The two began to stare at Silva.

Silva: 「First, shall we proceed while aiming to visit settlements near this area. Following this, we shall continue on the the next closest village. Should we continue on as such, we will naturally arrive at 【Xaos】 .」

As Hiiro and Liliyn were glaring at each other, they both let out a \*fu\*(15) as they shrugged.

Hiiro: 「That's fine. Let's get moving.」

Liliyn: 「Kora(16)! Don't go ordering me around, boy! Your master is me, you know.」

Hiiro: 「Stop screwing around, Aka-Loli(17). Who's my master?」

Liliyn: 「Isn't it obviously me?」

Hiiro: 「What kind of arrogant things are you saying with such a puny body?」

Liliyn: 「Eei(18)! Don't call me puny!」

Shamoe: 「Feeeee~(19)!」

Silva: 「Nofofofofo(20)!」

Mikazuki: 「Kui kui kui(21)!」

Looking at the two who were arguing in an uproar were Shamoe, who constantly fretted 'Awa Awa', and Silva, who continued to laugh joyously. In addition, Mikazuki, thinking that she was able to continue their journey, was overcome with enthusiasm.

Hiiro, after gaining some new companions, once again began his journey with the aim of ending up in the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 . However, Hiiro was not yet aware. In the oncoming tragedy that would soon strike that city, Hiiro would become the greatest determining factor in its conclusion. Hiiro was not yet aware.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 80

### The Heroes One Month Later

---

In the 【Capital City: Victorias】 , the festival celebrating the birth of King Rudolf van Strauss Arclain and his daughter, Lilith, had begun. Coincidentally, the two had been born on the same day of the same month.

Although it it was festival, it wasn't a large event that took place across the entire nation. Even though it was referred to as the festival of birth, the reality was akin to a birthday party that took place within the confines of the castle. However, for those taking part in the celebrations were very important people.

Of course, the royalty was a given. The guest list extended to famous writers and musicians, painters and chefs, and even famous adventurers. The line-up was so overwhelming, one could only describe it as amazing. Everyone in attendance was someone whose name was well known throughout the country.

Taishi: 「Congrats, Lilith!」

The one who had called out to Lilith who was visibly exhausted from greeting celebrities was one of the heroes summoned from another world. One of the ones that held the fate of the world on their shoulders, Taishi Aoyama.

Lilith: 「Ah, Taishi-sama<sup>(1)</sup>!」

Lilith joyfully rushed over towards Taishi while making a blossoming smile, as if her fatigue had been blown away. Although she normally didn't wear makeup, as this was a fairly important occasion, not to mention that she was the subject of the celebration, she had applied

Lilith's makeup was very natural and looked very good on her. Taishi thought she was always cute but she was even more so today, and he had his breath taken away.

Taishi: (Uu<sup>(2)</sup>... Cute!)

Seeing Lilith's beaming smile as she ran towards him like a puppy, Taishi had a strong desire to embrace her. However, he couldn't do that. He could tell that if he did, the girl next to him would hound him.

\*dosu\*([3](#))

Taishi: 「Gufu!([4](#))」

He suddenly feels an impact in his side. When he looks, he can see the girl's elbow buried in his side.

Taishi: 「W-What was that for, Chika...」

That's right. That girl, like him, was also a hero that was summoned, Chika Suzumiya. She had brown, healthy-looking skin and a nice, slender body. Also, the dress that she was currently wearing had a slit in it that resembled a China dress. It suited her very well.

However, that girl was currently wearing a sour look while wedging her elbow into Taishi.

Chika: 「No reason~. It's just that you were looking at Lilith with a perverted look on your face so I thought I'd just caution you.」

Taishi: 「What do you mean 'caution'? This is just violence. In the first place, I wasn't looking at her with perverted...」

Chika: 「You weren't looking at her? Nnnn?([5](#))」

Taishi: 「T-That's...」

Looking at Lilith's pink dress, which slightly exposed her breasts, Taishi's face turned red, answering while averting his gaze. Noticing where he was looking, Chika stabbed his eyes with her fingers.

Taishi: 「Gyaa!?([6](#))」

Lilith: 「T-Taishi-sama!？」

Chika: 「F-Fun!([7](#)) He got what he deserves!」

Lilith nervously tried to support Taishi who was causing a commotion while holding his eyes.

There were two people who were looking at those three from a different place. Those two girls were also heroes that were summoned. The one wearing a yellow dress, which did nothing to hide her voluptuous breasts, was Shuri Minamoto. The other, wearing a deep blue dress while holding a plate full of food, was Shinobu Akamori

Shinobu: 「Nyahaha<sup>(8)</sup>, Taishi-chi<sup>(9)</sup> has it rough~」

She speaks while bringing food to her mouth as if she were a completely unrelated third party.

Shuri: 「Uun<sup>(10)</sup>, but Taishi-kun is also at fault.」

Shinobu: 「You think so~? Well, I bet trying to capture Taishi-chi would be really troublesome」

Shuri: 「T-That's true」

Shinobu: 「Nn... Are you fine not going over there too, Shuri-chi?」

Shuri: 「Eh? M-Me? N-No, I'm...」

Shuri looked towards the other three as she spoke. It seemed like Taishi was still surrounded by the two while being told something.

Shuri: 「I-I don't have the courage to join in...」

Shinobu: 「Nyahaha, I'll bet. You'd need some serious power to jump in there」

Shinobu understood that it'd be impossible for the quiet Shuri to join in on that chaotic spectacle. Shuri, of course, also had feelings towards Taishi. However she couldn't act as forward as Chika or Lilith. Rather than that, if she were asked if she wanted Taishi so much that she would fight with her friends, she wasn't sure how she would answer.

As if understand what that girl was thinking, Shinobu smiled broadly and gave a light

laugh.

Shinobu: 「Maaaaan, it really is fun, people in love」

Shuri: 「Eh? Did you say something?」

Shinobu: 「Nope! It's nothing!」

Then, seemingly having finished their conversation, the three walked towards Shuri and Shinobu. Taishi had a dull and tired expression.

Shinobu: 「Good work, Taishi-chi!」

Taishi: 「If you were watching, then help me out a bit...」

Shinobu: 「No way! It was so interesting, why do I have to put a stop to it!?!」

Taishi: 「Look here, you...」

As she saw Taishi's shoulders drooping limply, Shinobu laughed. As she did, someone suddenly knocked into Taishi.

Taishi: 「Owa<sup>(11)</sup>!?!」

Taishi, who was about to tumble forward, desperately endured himself. However, as the one who knocked into him seemed to have dropped something, they had fallen onto their knees as they stared at the ground.

???: 「E-excuse me-su<sup>(12)</sup>! This was completely caused by my carelessness-su!」

Even while they said this, they continued to conduct their search.

Taishi: 「Eh? Ah, no, I'm alright, but...did something happen?」

Taishi said thus while looking down at the person who was desperately searching for

something. Said individual seemed to be a male as he wore a tuxedo.

Shinobu: 「Is something the matter?[\(13\)](#)」

Shinobu also raised the question.

???: 「Eh, eeh. It seems that I've apparently dropped my glasses-su. I can't see a thing-su.」

As they thought this was bad, those around the area began to join in the search.

Chika: 「Ah, isn't it this?」

As Chika had found them, she handed it over to the person. Said individual then began to politely bow several times.

???: 「I must offer you my most sincere and gracious appreciation-su. Even though I was the one who had bumped into you, I'm am most thankful-su.」

Taishi: 「No, no. We must help each other in times of need.」

As Taishi said thus, he began to observe the individual. Blue hair that had been worn behind them had extended to their waist. As their bangs were considerably long, it completely covered their eyes, to the point where they could not be seen. Although they had worn very large, round glasses, this would lead some to wonder whether or not they could actually see. Their age was not significantly different from the group of Heroes.

???: 「Iya~[\(14\)](#), you've really helped me out-su. Are you alright-su?」

The young man bashfully scratched his head. As he had once again lowered his head, the youth inquired into Taishi's well being. He had asked whether any injuries were sustained due to his collision.

Taishi: 「No, no, I'm fine.」

???: 「Is that so-su. That's a relief-su.」

Lilith: 「Ano...[\(15\)](#)」

What had been inserted between the two's exchange was Lilith's voice.

Taishi: 「Nn? What's wrong, Lilith?」

Lilith: 「N-no, ano...are you, perhaps, Nazaar-san[\(16\)](#)?」

Upon hearing Lilith's words, Chika pricked up her eyebrows.

Taishi: 「...someone you know?」

As she heard Taishi ask, Lilith faintly pulled her chin.

Lilith: 「Ah, no. I only know about this person because I've heard of them, so...」

Shinobu: 「A celebrity?」

As Shinobu asked thus, Lilith once again slightly nodded.

Lilith: 「Yes. Isn't that that case, Nazaar-san?」

Following this, the young man that had remained silent until now suddenly smiled.

Nazaar: 「Iya~, as I don't often attend places like this, I didn't think anyone would recognize this face-su.」

He scratched his head as he said thus.

Nazaar: 「Yeah-su. I'm Nazaar-su. Nazaar Skride. Nice to meet ya-su.」

As he said this, Nazaar extended his hand out, offering a handshake. Lilith answered by grasping his hand with both of hers.

Lilith: 「It's such an honor to be able to meet you.」

Taishi: 「H-hey, Lilith. Would you mind introducing us?」

Lilith: 「Ah, p-please excuse me! Eto<sup>(17)</sup>, this person is Nazaar Skride-san. He is considered one of the most famous artists.」

Nazaar: 「No, no. You say famous, but...I don't think it's to that extent!」

As Taishi saw him proudly insist as such, he thought that he was a person was somehow able to display a sense of intimacy.

Lilith: 「Were you perhaps invited by my father for my sake?」

Nazaar: 「Yeah-su. Well, I've received an invite before, but I wasn't able to come cause I was busy-su. 」

Lilith: 「Is that so.」

Nazaar: 「Ah, I forgot-su! Congratulations-su!」

As he said thus, he lowered his head. Upon seeing this, Lilith emitted a joyful smile as she grabbed the hem of her skirt and curtsied.

Lilith: 「Thank you for taking the time to congratulate me. Please fully enjoy yourself tonight.」

As her demeanor changed to a princess, she politely produced a string of words.

Nazaar: 「Although I'd really like to, I've got some work left that I have to get finished-su.」

Lilith: 「Will you be leaving so already?」

Nazaar: 「Unfortunately-su.」

Lilith: 「I see...no, I am truly grateful that you were able to visit. I believe the path back home has grown dark. Please take care.」

Nazaar: 「Haha, I'm grateful-su. Then-」

Saying thus, Nazaar departed with a swift pace.

Taishi: 「Is he really a celebrity, that guy?」

Lilith: 「Yes, Taishi-sama. All of his works are wonderfully exquisite. Look, that is one of his paintings.」

Saying thus, Lilith pointed towards a decoration of the party venue. It was a painting that contained a large picture.

It depicted a goddess being surrounded by fluttering angels. Animals and humans were etched into the background. Everyone seemed to be joyously dancing.

Lilith: 「It's a painting referred to as 《Eden》 [\(18\)](#). As my father took a liking to it at a glance, he apparently obtained it from an acquaintance who didn't want it anymore.」

Taishi: 「Hee~[\(19\)](#), this painting certainly as a feeling of warmth, huh. As everyone looks so happy, viewing it kinda makes you feel the same.」

Lilith: 「Indeed. In addition, he is a multi-talented individual. He also writes picture books.」

Taishi: 「Really?」

Lilith: 「When I was a child, I often read the picture book 《The Star's Gift》 [\(20\)](#). To this day, I still keep it safely stored.」

Shinobu: 「What's it about?」

Perhaps as her interest had been piqued, Shinobu inquired.

Lilith: 「It's an absolutely wonderful story.」

Following this, they had heard the story from Lilith.

In the night sky contained many stars. The stars were always looking over various worlds. Among them, a singular star was overlooking a particular world. In that world, an abundant of people were living there.

However, the world was absent of green, being mostly covered with wild desserts. As food did not grow well in such an environment, everyone had always carried out their lives in hunger. As the star felt pity for this planet, one day, they landed onto the world in the appearance of a person.

Following this, for the sake of the people suffering from starvation, they planted the something known as the 《Star Seed》 [\(21\)](#). Then, although the reason for this was unknown, the ground around the planted seed began to grow a variety of crops and vegetation.

In the blink of an eye, the desert transformed into a blanket of lush greenery. That world's inhabitants that saw this were incredibly grateful to the star. As they would now be able to eat until their stomachs were full, everyone emitted an enveloping smile.

However, the thing known as the 《Star Seed》 was also the star's life. In exchange for such abundant life, the star decided to give up its life.

The people's gratitude brought them to create an statue of the star. Following this, the world swore to ensure that their world prospered, thus, everyone made a wonderful world where everyone joined their hands together.

Shinobu: 「That star was such a good child~. No, I'm not really sure whether they're a kid though.」

Although she had tsukkomi(ed) [\(22\)](#) herself, she seemed to be genuinely impressed by the story itself. She felt a feeling of warmth spreading throughout her chest.

Lilith: 「Yes. I also love this story so much, that even to this day I sometimes go back and re-read it.」

Taishi: 「That book was from that Nazaar, huh.」

Taishi spoke in admiration.

Chika: 「Well, if we're talking about Taishi, then even a handstand is impossible for him.」

Taishi: 「Ever since earlier, what's gotten into you, Chika?」

Chika: 「B-but you're...that...even though I tried so hard with this dress...」

Taishi: 「Hah? What'd you say?」

Chika: 「Nothing at all! This insensitive Taishi!」

Taishi: 「Ita-!(23)」

As his foot was stomped on, Taishi raised a groan of pain.

Taishi: 「W-what the hell, Chika!?!」

Chika: 「I don't care anymore!?!」

Taishi: 「I have no idea what that's supposed to mean!」

Watching the two, Shinobu sighed with half-opened(24) eyes.

Shinobu: (That's no good, Chika-chi. Complimenting someone's dress is a high grade technique. There's no way that Taishi-chi who lacks resourcefulness could ever pull it off.)

Chika only wanted Taishi's impressions of her figure in a dress. However, not only was he completely oblivious to her appearance, he was completely enamored with Lilith. Seeing this, Chika grew irritated, to the point of breaking into an outburst of anger.

Perhaps empathizing with Chika, Lilith remained silent as expected, producing a wry smile. Shuri also sighed again as she felt sympathy for Chika.(25)

Staring at the heartwarming mood created by the heroes was a person in the shade of a row of pillars. This individual was none other than Nazaar, the one who was conversing

with them all previously.

Nazaar: (So those are the heroes-su... I was finally able to see them with my own eyes-su)

Nazaar's glasses glinted as he stared at them, but then he noticed someone's eyes on himself. After realizing who was looking at him, instead of running away he looked right back.

Nazaar: (It's alright-su. I won't do anything as long as nothing happens-su)

After making eye contact, it seems like the individual understood his meaning and looked away.

Nazaar: 「Haha, even when he's past his prime, he's still plenty scary-su. That Judom-san」

Yes, the one who he made eye contact with was the guild master of this country, Judom Lankars. He was also invited to this celebration.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 81

### Everyone's expectations

---

Judom Lankars was invited to the festival of birth, so he came. He came not only because he was a friend of the king's, but because he also wanted to see the ones known as heroes with his own eyes.

Previously, a commander of the country's military, a young man known as Vale Kimble, came to him and requested that he train the heroes, yet he bluntly refused.

Judom thought that he would give up afterwards, but Vale came time and time again. Because he was so persistent, Judom declared that he would decide whether he'd train them or not after he saw them with his own eyes.

That's why he came while using this celebration as an excuse. However, he came across a person he didn't expect to see there. That person was Nazaar Skride.

He called himself an artist. The king was in love with his artwork as he already possessed several of Nazaar's works. It was true that his artwork was amazing, capable of touching anyone's heart.

That man, however, wasn't just an artist. Judom knew that very well. And now, he noticed that Nazaar was spying on the heroes behind a pillar. Wondering if he was planning on causing something, Judom focused his gaze towards him.

It seemed like Nazaar had also noticed as he looked in Judom's direction. His eyes were saying: "I won't do anything to the heroes".

Judom knew about his personality. He wasn't the kind of person who'd do anything stupid. Understanding that, Judom stopped focusing on him.

Next, he began to look at the heroes.

(So those are the current heroes... How do I say it... They're just kids) (Judom)

Judom smiled bitterly while watching them laugh like they were having fun.

(Rudolf, do you plan on leaving our fate in the hands of these kids...?) (Judom)

With a sad expression, Judom looked towards the king who was still engaged in a conversation with important people.

(What are you doing, after sacrificing your own daughter... You're the king, Rudolf. Rather than throwing a festival of birth like this, isn't there something more important that you ought to be doing?) (Judom)

Looking away from Rudolph with a grave look on his face, Judom turned back and began to leave.

(I guess, in the end, I'll have to take action...) (Judom)

Thinking that, Judom departed from the venue with a sharp look in his eyes.

That evening, after the festival of birth had ended, King Rudolf was conversing with Minister Dennis Norman in the Oval Office. The contents of the discussion concerned the meeting requests received from the [Evila]'s Lord, Eveam.

As he unlocked the table's drawer and pulled it open, he took a signed letter from within. It was a letter that contained the details concerning the conference.

As Dennis saw this, he wore a difficult expression.

“As I thought, it seems to be genuine.” (Dennis)

“Umu...” (Rudolf)

In actuality, the letter that was held in his hand was not the only one that was sent. The other was a letter detailing the merits of entering into an alliance with them in great detail, one of which included inside information concerning the [Gabranth]. From the letter alone, it was clearly understood how desperately they were trying to establish an alliance.

Further included in the letter was the current thoughts that the [Evila] currently held.

“Before, I was called by that man to have a talk. He seems to have hesitated to call it authentic.” (Dennis)

“Judom, huh...” (Rudolf)

Indeed. Throughout the conversation, Judom had sprinkled the topic of how the letter from the [Evila] had arrived soon after they had immediately terminated the war between themselves and the [Gabranth].

Of course, as Judom had been constantly advising that there was a need for discussion, he was overjoyed by the news of an alliance conference as he supported it. Yet, Dennis was opposed to it.

Certainly, if they established an alliance, at the very least, the feud between the [Evila] and the [Humas] would end, possibly creating an era of peace. However, this obviously could not be considered anything else other than wishful thinking.

From what they could gather so far in their dealings with the [Evila], if they naively agreed to their demands, they would undoubtedly face harsh consequences. As their

last alliance was betrayed, the [Evila] that came in the past performed the outrageous acts on humans, all for the sake of 《Evila Conversion》 .

The most outrageous was the 《Evila Conversion》 . After hunting countless humans, they were trapped in an experimental facility that the [Evila] owned. As the experiments ultimately failed, all that was left were countless corpses.

Although this was a fairly old story, the [Evila] that had actually conducted such experiments were still alive to this day. This was because they had long life-spans. If they were once again plotting to resume such experiments, this time, they may only be trying to lower the Human's guard so as to hunt them from their blind spot.

As long as such concerns were unable to be dispelled, Dennis would continue to preach the risks of such an alliance as he advised Rudolf. Yet, Judom argued clearly that the past is the past.

What was really outrageous about this argument was that, in addition to Evila's conduct, the Humas have performed numerous atrocities that caused grief and incited hatred from the other races. These included placing a bomb inside an Evila to destroy a village, suppressing and enslaving the Gabranth, and numerous other acts that the heavens would spit on.

However, the past was the past. If someone were to keep holding their grudges forever, they would lose sight of what is before them, causing them to miss the important things. Each side had erred, yet, that was in the past.

The most important thing is the future and what lies ahead. In order to prevent the wars and atrocities that occurred in the past, the bygone days when every race joined hands and coexisted in peace, is something that Judom strived for passionately.

From Rudolf's perspective both sides had valid points. They should cautiously approach the Evila, and only associate with them as necessary. Like Dennis said, they should continue planning while remaining vigilant. If there is a chance that they'll be able to work together and coexist, the possibility should be pursued. Both of them are correct.

However, if either of them were mistaken, there is a chance that it would be the end for the Humas Continent. It is this reason why they were unable to come up with a decision.

In reality, they've already made their decision. In order to defeat the Demon Lord, Rudolf sacrificed his daughters. If they retreated and were killed in the process, their sacrifices would be in vain.

When he said thus to Judom, he moved towards the king and raised him by his collar as he spoke forcefully.

“You shouldn’t waste this chance! Everyone will be able to live peacefully! Your children will be crying with joy in the other world! Isn’t that what you want?” (Judom)

A world in which no one is afraid and everyone can smile. If such a world wasn’t created, the life of his daughters would be wasted.

With a distorted expression caused by being held up by the neck, Rudolf quietly told Judom “Let me think for a bit.” Judom furrowed his brows in an unpleasant expression, and, as there was no immediate response, he let go and walked away.

Then, he said

“Understand? I’ll also be coming with you to the conference. To allow you to focus on the peace negotiations, I’ll protect you from the shadows. So...as I’ve asked...please go to the conference.” (Judom)

After he said it, he left the place.

The two left in the Oval Office wore a wry smile as they remembered the previous exchange. Dennis, in particular, was appalled at the indignation displayed, even if Judom was Rudolf’s best friend.

“My goodness. This is the reason why I don’t like dealing with such a violent person.” (Dennis)

“Dennis.” (Rudolf)

When Dennis received a sharp glare from Rudolf, he thought he had gone overboard and prepared to make an excuse.

“But, your majesty.” (Dennis)

“Ahh, everything starts here. Nothing will be wasted. I will..... by no means waste the lives of my daughters.” (Rudolf)

“S-so, you have made a decision?” (Dennis)

Dennis said with an uncertain tone.

“Aah. Shortly, we’ll head to the conference.” (Rudolf)

“What? Y-you can’t do that!? What about those guys?” (Dennis)

Dennis, in his state of confusion, immediately tried to express his disagreement.

“I know.” (Rudolf)

“Eh?...What?” (Dennis)

“I’m going to the conference. Like I said before, the life of my daughter, and those that put their lives on the line, will not be wasted.” (Rudolf)

“This, your majesty.” (Dennis)

“Judom will be coming as well. Also.....the heroes.” (Rudolf)

“The heroes.....you say?” (Dennis)

“Aah, they are the key. As I said before, there is a chance that the Evila might make an unexpected move. In the meantime.....we need to arrange ALL the preparations.”  
(Rudolf)

There was no hesitation in those eyes. It might have been the composure of a country’s king, yet, sensing his ambition, Dennis swallowed and spoke. (E Note: Taishi’s name in kanji means Ambition. Word play of some sort.)

“The plan.....has been decided, huh.” (Dennis)

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 82 To the First Destination

---

“And? Where is the closest village from here?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro asks Silva, who is walking in front of him, while he rides on top of Mikazuki.

Their final destination at the moment is [Xaos] but it was still extremely far away. They aren't in any particular hurry so they planned to travel at a leisurely pace.

His objective was to reach [Xaos] and visit the [Fortuna Grand Library] so that he could read the books and materials available only to royalty and people of equal social standing.

Aside from his objective, Hiiro also wanted to look around the Demon World<sup>1</sup>. That is why he thought to visit several villages and other sightseeing places en route to [Xaos]. For that purpose he leaves the duty of guiding him to Liliyn and company, who are much more familiar with the Demon World than he is.

Of course, Hiiro only required Liliyn for achieving his objective. It wasn't like he approved of her traveling together with him. When he caught sight of her admission permit for the [Fortuna Grand Library], he thought that he could use his connection to her to his advantage in order to increase his chances of being able to read the aforementioned books.

As a result of that thinking, though Liliyn is certainly a troublesome woman, Hiiro decided that he would travel together with her. However, it wasn't like he was planning on a peaceful journey. He determined that if they were to ever become troublesome or useless he would immediately separate from them.

At the moment Hiiro is traveling together with them to acquire information regarding the Demon World, which is why he was asking where the closest village was. The one who answers was not Silva, but Liliyn.

“The closest from here would be the [Asura Race] in the [Raohrb Desert]. Isn't that right, Silva?” (Liliyn)

“You are correct. In my opinion, however, I believe it would be best to avoid that place...” (Silva)

Hiiro frowns at Silva who anxiously said so.

“What do you mean?” (Hiiro)

“The [Raohrb Desert] is an extremely dangerous place” (Silva)

“Hou<sup>2</sup>” (Hiiro)

“A boundless desert stretches across the horizon, but rather than the extreme heat, there is a slight problem regarding the [Asura Race]” (Silva)

“Hm? The [Asura Race] is a species of [Evila], aren't they? Is there really a problem?” (Hiiro)

“I'm afraid there is. Their race controls the desert. I have heard that they do not take well to outsiders trespassing in their territory” (Silva)

Hiiro has heard that the different species of Evila don't interact much with one another. Of course there are exceptions, but to the [Asura Race] it seems to be an obvious rule. It's possible that they hate others that enter their territory.

“But they won't suddenly attack us, will they?” (Hiiro)

“...” (Silva)

“Oi3, what's with the silence?” (Hiiro)

Silva moves closer to Hiiro and whispers into his ear.

“Ojou-sama4 is also an [Evila]. Well, Ojou-sama is a bit of a special case, but it would not be wrong to basically think of her as the typical [Evila]...” (Silva)

Hearing that, Hiiro inadvertently looks towards Liliyn and remembers when he first met her and the few days that followed after.

“Mu5? What is it?” (Liliyn)

(That's the typical...? Does that mean that I should be wary of the [Evila] as a whole...?) (Hiiro)

Suddenly being tested by poison, extremely powerful but gets assaulted by her underlings, suddenly forcefully being asked to be her servant. Hiiro understood Liliyn as being an extremely abnormal existence.

Speaking of which, Hiiro also heard that the maid, Shamoe, had also been driven away by the [Evila]. In other words, he determined that he would have to change how he thinks of the [Evila] from now on.

Hiiro believed they wouldn't suddenly attack without warning, but he would need to be prepared for anything since it wouldn't be strange for the unexpected to happen.

“Speaking of which, what kind of people are the [Asura Race]?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro thought that having even a little information would be helpful in finding a way to protect himself.

“Hmm, about that...” (Silva)

Silva looks apologetic.

“What? You don’t know anything?” (Hiiro)

“Please forgive me. The [Asura Race] do not leave the desert often, and I hear that their population is relatively low. Therefore there is very little information regarding them. I have only heard that they once forcibly expelled people who had accidentally entered the desert” (Silva)

“I see. So only rumors...” (Hiiro)

If that’s the case, Hiiro can’t completely trust what Silva says. However, there’s no smoke without fire. Even if the rumors aren’t true, something similar probably happened. Either it is exactly as the rumors state, or... they may be an even more problematic race.

“What shall we do? Shall we continue towards the desert?” (Silva)

“I wonder...” (Hiiro)

“Mu? What is it? Getting scared?” (Liliyn)

Hiiro became irritated hearing Liliyn’s words.

“Of course I’m not scared. Fine, let’s go and meet those [Asura Race] or whatever they’re called” (Hiiro)

“Kukuku6, I wouldn’t have it any other way” (Liliyn)

Liliyn welcomed danger. Because that way she’d be less bored.

“By the way kozou7, don’t you think that you’re the only one who’s relaxing?” (Liliyn)

“What do you mean?” (Hiiro)

It seemed like Hiiro truly didn’t understand the meaning behind Liliyn’s question.

“Don’t play dumb. Why are you the only one riding that bird?” (Liliyn)

Liliyn snappily points at Mikazuki.

“Of course I am. Because she’s mine” (Hiiro)

“Kuikuikui!” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki flaps her wings \*basabasabasa\* like she’s embarrassed and raises her voice in a happy tone.

“Eei8! Why am I, your master, the one who’s walking while you, my servant, are relaxing on top of that bird!?” (Liliyn)

“Shut up. Who the hell’s your servant” (Hiiro)

“Let me ride that too!” (Liliyn)

“I refuse” (Hiiro)

“Let me ride it!” (Liliyn)

“No way” (Hiiro)

“I said, let me ride it!” (Liliyn)

“Walk, Hikikomori<sup>9</sup>” (Hiiro)

“Who’s a Hikikomori!?” (Liliyn)

Liliyn shouts out without concealing her anger.

“F-Fun<sup>10</sup>. If it’s come to this I’ll ride it using force!” (Liliyn)

Saying that, Liliyn jumps towards Mikazuki’s back.

\*sasa\*!<sup>11</sup>

Mikazuki, however, immediately moves out of the way. Liliyn, who missed her mark, lands gracefully on her feet and glares at Mikazuki. Mikazuki freezes due to her glare, but...

“Oi<sup>12</sup>, leave it at that. Rather, Akaloli, you’re a rather despicable person to force yourself on someone who doesn’t want it<sup>13</sup>” (Hiiro)

“Ugu<sup>14</sup>...” (Liliyn)

“Don’t you think so too, Jii-san<sup>15</sup>?” (Hiiro)

“Ojou-sama, I cannot condone your actions” (Silva)

“Whaaat!?” (Liliyn)

Liliyn let out a surprised voice hearing Silva’s words. Shamoe, who was nearby, began to act nervously.

With a disappointed look on her face, Liliyn looks towards Hiiro and points her finger.

“I-I’ll definitely make you mine!” (Liliyn)

“Nofofofofo! That is definitely our Ojou-sama!” (Silva)

“I-I-I don’t r-really get what’s going on, but you’re amazing Ojou-sama!” (Shamoe)

Her two servants praise her.

“Instead of fooling around, let’s hurry up and get a move on” (Hiiro)

“Eei! How about you read the mood a little!” (Liliyn)

Hiiro was unsociable as usual.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 83 Battle in Raohrb Desert

---

After I walked for a while, I saw an entrance to the desert.

(This is <Raohrb Desert> ( 【ラオーブ砂漠】 ) huh ?) (Hiiro)

The moment he entered the desert, he could feel warm dry air blowing against his cheek.

Up until now, there was no wind or daylight this strong. It's almost like he had entered a

completely different world.

According to Silva, the demon land is almost covered in this. It's normal for an environment to change drastically. It's said that the <Evila> race is strong because they withstand these harsh environment.

Hiiro can't see anything ahead, only the horizon. After they walk for a bit, they stop because of Liliyn.

“Oi, What's wrong ?” (Hiiro)

“Kukuku, oi, Shamoe.” (Liliyn)

“Y-Yes !” (Shamoe)

Liliyn called Shamoe while ignoring Hiiro.

“Listen Shamoe, Don't leave my side. Got it ?” (Liliyn)

“Eh ? Y-Yes !” (Shamoe)

It's unknown why Liliyn said that, but Shamoe trusted her 100%, so she sticks close to her. Silva too, without saying anything, stands close to her.

But, not Hiiro. Hiiro didn't understand anything she talked about. So, he asked.

“Oi, What're you doing ?” (Hiiro)

“Kukuku, You will understand soon enough.” (Liliyn)

She said that and walked again, Silva and Shamoe also walking together with her.

“Kui ?” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki said that as if asking if Hihiro won't go with them as well. Hihiro sighed.

“There's no choice but to go.” (Hihiro)

Hihiro said that while dragging Mikazuki.

There's a mountain of sand ahead, their destination is ahead of that. When they pass it,

Hihiro stopped and was bewildered by the view.

There's one person there.. He never saw anyone like that before. “Who ?”

Violet hair. Their hairstyle is like a samurai's. Its hair should be around 20 cm. Blue uniform. A bandage to cover the nose and mouth. And two sword behind their back.

(editor note: are you sure it's a bandage and not a mask like the ones doctors use?)

(TL Note : Ninja Turtle ?)

That guy is folding his arms and glaring this way. It's obviously full of killing intent.

Hihiro's party is on guard and slowly starts approaching him. When they got close, that person silently talks.

“I'll ask you one question. Do you want to leave or become a corpse ? Choose.” (???)

What a dangerous question. They can't ignore the pressure of that question. Depending on our answer, he won't do anything right ?

“Who are you ? You're in the way. Move.” (Hihiro)

Hihiro responded just like that. That person glares even more.

“Looks like you don't know the rules here. Then, I'll tell you.” (???)

His eyes shine suspiciously.

“Kukuku, Careful Boy.” (Liliyn)

Liliyn is smiling happily, Hiiro wonders what's the matter.

Sfx: ZABAZABA

Suddenly something sprung up from the sand.

(What !?) (Hiiro)

Hiiro hold his hand in front of his eyes to prevent the sand getting in to his eyes. And then, he looks again..

It's a person. He can at least see three people here. They all hold weapons and start coming with killing intent.

One to Liliyn, One to Hiiro, and One to Silva. All of them are wearing blue clothes and a turban-like hood, tied violet hair until their waist, a bandage to cover their mouth and on their back, twin blades like that guy earlier.

(TL Note : Ninja !)

(<Evila> are all like this ?) (Hiiro)

To come without having a conversation, <Evila> are such a war-hungry race ? As if Liliyn is not enough.

Hiiro immediately draw his “Thorn Piercer” to fight.

Sfx : Kakiiii ! (weapon clashing)

Their blades clashed and sparks are created.

“Ku !” (Hiiro)

They're stronger than Hiiro thought. Hiiro is pushed back and clenches his teeth. It seems the enemy also thought that Hiiro's power is stronger than they expected. After staring at each other, they dashed towards each other again.

But, the enemy didn't fall from the air, he instead uses steps to maintain altitude and fly over Hiiro.

(Don't tell me, Mikazuki !?) (Hiiro)

The enemy probably decided to kill Mikazuki first.

“Oi ! Drolling Bird ! Go away !” (Hiiro)

Saying that, Mikazuki avoided the enemy that was trying to attack her from the back.

She never thought that the enemy would fall down like that. The enemy, stunned at Hiiro's action, has no other choice but to attack him again.

Kiiiiin !

Once again, their blades clashed. This time, the enemy might have grasped Hiiro's power since he didn't get blown away. Now, he's confident that he's stronger than Hiiro. He has ascertained his victory. Suddenly...

Pishun !

Suddenly, Hiiro is gone from his sight. He's confused at the situation.

On Hiiro's arm the word <Speed> can be seen. He activated his word. Hiiro is also confident to fight only with his Katana. He knew that his footing and power is worse than the enemy's. That's why, he used <Word Magic>.

“Eat this !” (Hiiro)

He appeared behind his opponent, and slashed vertically.

Bushun !

Blood dripped on the sand, but..

(Che ! Too shallow huh..) (Hiiro)

The enemy managed to react in the last moment and avoided fatal injuries.

The enemy who had avoided Hihiro's attack lost his bandage that covered him. So, his true face is revealed. Rather than a man, it's more like a boy. It's without a doubt a pretty boy. On the boy mouth, a straight scar, and blood is dripping.

(EN: I'm gonna assume you meant mouth and not voice)

Wiping the blood, the boy said..

"You..are strong, I will get a bit serious." (???)

The boy takes the blade on his back.

Then..

"Wait !" (???)

The one who sad that, is that samurai dude. Hihiro and the boy took a glance at him. He seems grumpy, but they don't know why.

"Mu ? Is it over already ?" (Liliyn)

"It seems so." (Silva)

Hihiro looked at Liliyn and Silva. It seems they already defeated their opponents. Liliyn is trampling her opponent's head, and Silva is locking his opponent's arm joint.

"It seems, you're not average people" (???)

"If you think so, let us through already." (Liliyn)

"Fu, sorry, but that won't happen. Because.." (???)

He drew his twin blades, they were black. It's what people usually call Black Sword. He then put on his guard.

"Because I will kill you all !" (???)

Hearing that guy, Liliyn's laughter echoes..

“Kukuku, You will kill me ? What a funny joke.” (Liliyn)

“It’s not a joke, even if you’re just a brat, I won’t allow anyone in this desert !” (???)

“Hou..” (Liliyn)

A dark smile can be seen. Liliyn emits blood thirst to destroy the enemy’s blood thirst.

The enemy stomps his feet and flew.

“Che !” (???)

She smacked her lips because she can’t see him. The enemy came down to strike, but there’s nobody there.

“Here !” (Liliyn)

A shiver runs down on his back. Just when did she get beside him ?

Dogo !

The enemy took a considerable impact from Liliyn’s kick and shows a distorted face. He managed to adjust his body when he got blown off. When he landed, Liliyn’s sharp nail is already in front of him.

The samurai guy is startled. He never thought Liliyn possess this much power. Even if he’s going all out, she beat him as if ridiculing him. In that instant, he can see the little girl’s wicked smile.

He thought, he’s dead now.

Dosu !

Something interrupted and Liliyn put distance between them. The Samurai Guy is drenched in sweat, in front of him is a blade (scimitar of some sort, from the bishounen).

“What’s he doing ? That boy.” (Liliyn)

Liliyn took a glance from the defeated enemy, it was that boy who was fighting with Hiiro earlier.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 84 The Ashura Tribe

---

“I can’t... let you kill him.”

The boy speaks, as if unaffected by Liliyn’s bloodlust. Hiiro’s attention was captured by the young man’s strange actions.

From the samurai-ish man’s atmosphere, and actions, it was likely that he was a man of some power. But Liliyn was head and shoulders above him. With the way things were going, Liliyn’s claws would definitely find their way into his heart. The man himself was unable to keep up with any of her movements, and he probably had resolved himself for whatever fate awaited him. Even Hiiro could barely follow Liliyn, and that was only because he was a distance away.

But he could barely trace them. If he were to go against speed like that, it would be difficult.

(But that boy easily followed them)

Right, the boy was easily following the two’s fight with his eyes. He had perfectly timed himself when he used both of his arms to throw his curved blade, and put a hold on the fight. To be able to do that, the boy must have been quite powerful himself.

While Hiiro wasn’t looking, the Samurai man was by the boy’s side. And surprisingly, he lowered himself to his knees.

“I-I apologize, chief!” (Man)

Hiiro was startled at hearing the word, ‘chief’.. Liliyn was the same, and her eyebrows twitched for a moment. But she quickly nodded as if to accept the fact.

“Hmmhmmmm. I realized that quite a powerful person had been hidden in the sand, but I never expected the brat to be the head here.” (Liliyn)

“So she noticed...” (Man)

The samurai man remorsefully spits out his words. In reality, their group had noticed the moment Hiiro’s group had set foot in the desert. They had hidden several of their companions under the sand in order to initiate a surprise attack. But it seems that Liliyn had already noticed as such.

It was at that time, that hiiro started to understand the words she said. At that time, she had suddenly signaled Shamoe to stay by her side. And she also cautioned Hiiro himself. She had already noticed that they were surrounded by enemies.

“If you don’t want me to fight that man, does that mean you’ll take me on? Hmm?”  
(Liliyn)

A fearless smile floats on Liliyn’s face, but the boy shakes his head.

“Did you come... to... lay waste to our desert?” (Boy)

“We had no such intentions.” (Liliyn)

“Then... why are you here?” (Boy)

“We’re just travelling. We’re escorting that brat.” (Liliyn)

Liliyn signals to Hiiro, and the boy shifts his gaze to him.

“Are you... from the 『Ashura Tribe』 ?” (Hiiro)

When asked, the boy gives a firm nod.

“I see. It seems that you really do live in this desert. By the way, do you have any plans on letting us pass peacefully?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro grips his sword, as he lets out his words. The boy reaches for the pair of blades on his back, and slowly draws them. But the second both blades had come out of their sheathes, Hiiro knit his brow. The reason being, that instead of the edges you would find on a normal sword, the ends of the blades were cur rectangular, like building blocks. They clearly lacked the ability to cut.

The dropped the items, which were difficult to even call sword, to the ground, and they immediately sunk into the sand. They probably weighed quit a lot.

And he took the two black swords held by ths samurai man. Hiiro noticed it now, that the black swords the man held were of the same Japanese Katana Design as 『Piercer』 . The boy pointed the blade of the two weapons at Hiiro, and prepared himself.

“You shall... not pass.” (Boy) (TL: I couldn’t help myself)

“... I see.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro put even more power into the hand grasping his sword. The boy was probably restricting his own movements by carrying around those large slabs of metal on his back.

He removed those restraints, and took the swords, no, katanas, of the samurai man. And the fighting stance he took was well refined. Hiiro determined that the true owner of these two swords was probably the boy.

(It’s as if he wasn’t the slightest bit serious until now... interesting.)

In order to confront his enemy with his full might, he prepared to use his 《Word Magic》 .

(The thing I'll need to be careful of is his speed. I don't know how heavy those swords are, but seeing as he could keep up with Aka-Loli's movements, I should assume he can move at that speed as well...)

Without taking his eyes off of the boy, he put his right arm behind his back, and wrote 『Speed(速)』 . He set it to activate remotely with his invocation management.

Perhaps the other side noticed him using magic, but the boys actions grew more vigilant.

“Wait a second, brat.” (Liliyn)

That one was directed at Hihiro.

“What? I'll be the one to take him on. Don't step in.” (Hihiro)

If Liliyn tried to KS him, he wouldn't get any EXP. For Hihiro, who wanted to raise his level all at once, fighting a strong enemy was all that he could wish for.  
(TL: KS = Kill Steal)

“Just wait. There's something I want to ask.” (Liliyn)

Saying that, she turned her head to the boy.

“Oy, you. Why are you relentlessly purging trespassers? It's not like this desert belongs to you or anything.” (Liliyn)

Her words were on the mark. Though they had heard rumors of the 『Ashura Tribe』 rejecting intruders, that was just because they wanted to protect their territory.

The boy spoke of laying waste to the desert. But when they tried to precede any further, the boy persistently barred them. As Liliyn was curious as to what he was hiding in the desert, she pressed him with question.

“As if you, who are blessed with ignorance, would understand our feelings!” (Man)

The Samurai Man suddenly shouts out in an angry voice. But as if she didn't feel any rage at all, Liliyn returned her words.

“Hmm, are you a fool? That's why I'm asking. Just answer already.” (Liliyn)

“What!? You bastard!” (Man)

The boy raised his hand to order the man to silence. Understanding the meaning of the gesture, the samurai man closed his mouth. And the boy turned to Liliyn once more.

“... Got it... will speak.” (Boy)

“In this desert... no, in the heart of this desert... a certain monster lives. Intruders... anger him... no good. We... in trouble. So... here, I eliminate you.” (Boy)

His peculiar speech pattern made it hard to understand, but after a bit more conversation, the meaning got across.

“To summarize, you 『Ashura Tribe』 are making sure that monster doesn't get angry. So you're trying to prevent those that don't know anything from wandering around here?” (Hiiro)

“Yes.” (Boy)

“And that monster is very tough, so you can't do anything with your own power?” (Hiiro)

“Don't want... anyone to die.” (Boy)

If they fought without heeding the casualties, then perhaps they would have a chance of victory. But the 『Ashura Tribe』 are few in numbers. Among them, many are too old or young for battle. They especially didn't want to expose their children, who shouldered their hopes for the future, to battle. That's why they were living inconspicuously as to not do anything to provoke the monster.

“But can't you just leave the desert then?” (Hiro)

The one who answered Hiiro was the Samurai Man.

“We can't do that.” (Man)

With a somber expression, the man clenched his teeth.

“Why?” (Hiiro)

“The desert is our home. We're a race that lives and withers with the sand. Also... here lies the grave of the 『Ashura Tribe』. We can't abandon it.” (Man)

Near here was the 『Ashura Tribe』 settlement. From the days of old, they had lived here. And this goes without saying, but plenty of them met their ends here as well. For them, a grave stone was erected. That place was called 『Grave Tower』, and it was made by carving out a large formation of rock.

To the 『Ashura Tribe』, relations within the clan came before all else, and they respected their dead more than anyone. When one died, they believed that, while the body became an empty husk, the soul would return to the clan. They were unable to abandon their grave along with the desert.

“Then can’t you just take that grave marker with you?” (Hiiro)

“Don’t speak the impossible. Do you think we could violate our precious treasure like that!?” (Man)

Well, once you’ve buried a man, you can’t really dig him up to move him.

“And preventing you from passing is also for your sake! You’re no match for that monster! If you don’t want to die, then leave quickly!” (Man)

“I refuse.” (Hiiro)

“... What?” (Man)

Hiiro’s prompt decision was shocking, but more so was the fact that it was a refusal.

“Why must I, for some monster I’ve never even met, abandon the road I came down?” (Hiiro)

“W-weren’t you listening to what I was saying!? I don’t care whatsoever if you’re killed by that monster. But what do you plan on doing if that monster comes at us in its rage!?” (Man)

“Hmph. Then we just have to kill it, right?” (Hiiro)

“Wha... Y-you can only say that because you’ve never seen it! It’s too late to run once you’ve gotten it angry!” (Man)

“I’ll say it as many times as I must. We will cross here. If you plan on getting in our way, we’ll cross blades too.” (Hiiro)

“Dammit!” (Man)

The Samurai Man gave Hiiro, who wouldn’t listen to a word he was saying, a scornful glare. But the boy by his side simply silently looked in Hiiro’s direction. And he put his hand on the man’s shoulder, that was trembling with anger.

“C-chief...?” (Man)

“... Stand back.” (Boy)

“U-understood.” (Man)

Following the boy’s words, the man stepped back.

“Oy, Aka-Loli. As I said, I’ll be the one taking him down.” (Hiiro)

“... Fine by me. But I don’t know if he plans on fighting.” (Liliyn)

“What?” (Hiiro)

The boy returned the swords in his hand to their sheathes.

“What are you doing? Are you saying we can pass?” (Hiiro)

The boy silently stares at Hiiro again. And he quietly opens his mouth.

“Are you going... no matter what?” (Boy)

“Yeah, taking a detour would be a pain.” (Hiiro)

“... Got it. Then... I follow.” (Boy)

“What?” (Hiiro)

“C-chief! Are you sure?” (Man)

The man raises an alarmed voice at the boy’s proposal. But the boy gives a light nod, showing his intent.

“... Understood. Then I’ll return, and inform our comrades of these events.” (Man)

“Yes... be careful.” (Boy)

“Yes. Then.” (Men)

After the samurai man left the area, the boy turned to Hiiro again.

“Introduction... late. I... Camus. I’ m the 『Ashura Race』 ... Chief.” (Camus)

(TL: If you didn’t know, Camus is pronounced Kamyu)

By his disinterested expression, and his youth, one wouldn’ t think him to be the head of a race. Even if, as an 『Evila』 , his age conflicted with his appearance, looking at a boy that looked to be of a similar age to himself, Hiiro couldn’ t help but doubt his chiefhood.

“Now, I’ll take you... to home. There... please determine.” (Camus)

“Determine What?” (Hiiro)

“... Monster’s... terror.” (Camus)

For the first time, a speck of fire glowed in the back of the young man’s eyes. He was definitely showing his anger. Though Camus appeared to be devoid of emotions, he harbored quite a resentment for the monster.

Hiiro crossed his arms, and thought of whether or not to follow the boy. Seeing the 『Ashura Tribe』 ’ s settlement was definitely one of the goals of this journey. It would be beneficial if they had someone to lead them there. Of course, there was no need to drop their guard.

“Isn’t it fine?” (Liliyn)

Liliyn said as such, so Hihiro directed his gaze to the others. Silva nods with a slight smile on his face. Shamoe is fidgeting by Liliyn's side, and it seems that her mind was unable to keep up with the sudden development.

Putting the maid aside, it seems the other two will follow without complaint. With Liliyn's strength, no matter how strong the opponent, she should be able to take them out if they show any signs of deceiving the group.

"Got it. Then I'll have you be our guide." (Hihiro)

The boy nods, turns his back to Hihiro's group, and starts walking. His men also get into rank and file behind him, and quietly follow.

(A monster of the desert... I bet it has quite a bit of strength.)

The strong Camus is taking such an attitude, so the monster should be something ferocious and uncontrollable, even for him.

As they walked, Hihiro approached Silva to see if he had any relevant information on the monster, but he didn't know anything. Liliyn's answer was the same.

"But doesn't it sound interesting? Things like this aren't bad for entertainment."  
(Liliyn)

"You're one to talk, after you holed yourself into that mansion for so long." (Hihiro)

"Mu... listen here, brat! I only stayed there to accomplish my own ambitions! Don't forget that!" (Liliyn)

Liliyn insisted this while pointing her finger at Hihiro, but Hihiro closed his eyes halfway, and let out a light sigh.

"More importantly. How does that guy look from your perspective?" (Hihiro)

"Hmm? So you want to know? Hm?" (Liliyn)

An irritating smile manifested, so Hihiro got slightly pissed off.

"Just answer the question." (Hihiro)

"Hmhmm. Let's see, he was the Chief, right? I think he at least has the power to back the title." (Liliyn)

"So he has something of that level?" (Hihiro)

"Don't play dumb. Since you also use a katana, you should understand that better than I." (Liliyn)

Right. After seeing Camus's strength firsthand, Hihiro had a slight grasp of it. Neither side was serious, but still, it was apparent that he had a considerable amount of power.

“In regards to physical ability alone, you wouldn’t stand a chance. And his magic is still a mystery. It may be good that you didn’t 1v1 him there.” (Liliyn)

Liliyn makes an ecstatic grin as she speaks.

“Quite joking around. If we fought, I would have won.” (Hihiro)

“Kukuku. Where does that confidence come from... Well, when that battle actually comes to pass, make sure to entertain me. Kukuku.” (Liliyn)

Her phrasing made it seem as if she had seen through Hihiro’s true strength. It’s true that she said she was accompanying him to find out his secrets, and to reveal his identity. The feeling of having her stare at him while he fought wasn’t a nice one. It felt as if he was being strip naked, and examined.

(Come at me if you will. I’ll look for a time when this one isn’t around.)

With that decision, Hihiro stared at Camus’s back as he walked ahead.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 85 Liliyn and Sivan

---

The desert sun glared down onto the group, causing them to sweat profusely. After walking for a while, the group saw something that they could rejoice about.

“Is that...an Oasis?” (Hiiro)

He thought it was an illusion, however, as Liliyn’s group looked in that direction as well, Hiiro felt relieved. At the same time, their stomachs growled. Since they had walked for a long time, their constitution had been weakened as well. As it was almost lunch time, their stomachs let out a thunderous warning.

“That place...residence” (Kamui)

Kamui pointed at the Oasis. It seemed like they’ll be able to take a break soon

There was an area covered in greenery about the size of Tokyo Dome (about 1,240 m<sup>2</sup>). They were also able to see a pond there as well. Beside the pond, there was a single governing building that looked like a mongolian yurt.

(It’s my first time seeing a yurt...it’s bigger than I expected.) (Hiiro)

A yurt was a round tent supported by two pillars at the center. The frame radiated out from the center of the yurt to form the roof. A thick sheet made out of wool was then draped over the framework to form the roof and the walls.

The yurt was about 4-6 meters in diameter. There were also several pieces of furniture nearby just like a dwelling place.

“Ah, Kamui, it’s Kamui” (Child A)

“It’s true” (Child B)

“Kamui, Kamui” (Other Children)

Several children left the yurt, and ran towards Kamui. Kamui lowered his body and hugged each of them one after another.

(He is adored by the children, huh.) (Hiiro)

Looking at the scene before him, Hiiro felt nostalgic. When he was at the orphanage, as Hiiro was the oldest person among them, he was entrusted in taking care of the younger children. Even though he was doing it unwillingly, he smiled wryly as he remembered the innocent smile of the younger children.

“Ah, hey, hey, Kamui Kamui! Who are those people?” (Child C)

When one of the children asked an adult woman near Kamui turned to look at him with caution.

“Hey, lower your head and ask.” (Adult women)

“EhEh~. but Mama, Kamui Kamui said he is fine with this!” (Child C)

“That is right!” (Child B)

“Kamui Kamui is Kamui Kamui!” (Child A)

All the children talked back to the adults. The adults responded with a hopeless shrug. The person with topknot hair that had returned beforehand emerged.

“...Chief.” (Person with topknot hair)

If you look closely, there was another person near him. He was an old man, who had so much wrinkles that you could feel the number of years he had lived. Furthermore, both his eyes were closed. There were burn marks on the top of his eyes, which may be the reason why he could no longer open them. Furthermore, he had a prosthetic right leg.

“Gramps...will you listen?” (Kamui)

“Un, yes I’ll hear it” (Gramps)

After the old man responded, he slowly approach Hiiro and his group. It was clear that his eyes were not open, yet, he was staring at Hiiro.

Then, he just glanced over Liliyn’s group and simply confirmed their presence. Hiiro noticed that the old man furrowed his brows when he looked at Liliyn. He then faced Hiiro one more time. Hiiro stared back at him without knitting his eyebrows.

“.....I see, what an interesting group of people.” (Old man)

He even smiled further, increasing the number of wrinkles on his face.

“Right, Kamui, I heard most of it from Jinwu, but after seeing it, are you still going to proceed?” (Old man)

“At that time...I will stop it...life... life on the line” (Kamui)

The old man laughed happily and said.

“Hohohoho, that is impossible.” (Old man)

“Eh...why?” (Kamui)

He was surprised by the response, and put on a puzzled expression.

“Kamui, you are strong. You are strong enough not to lose to those older than you, but...” (Old man)

He turned to look at Liliyn with a his eyes closed smiling.

“That is something else.” (Old man)

“.....That?” (Kamui)

Kamui moved his gaze toward Liliyn in the same way as the old man. Liliyn crossed her arms and opened her mouth.

“That was a bit rough, right...Sivan?” (Liliyn)

Not only Hihiro, but also Silva and Shamoe was surprised by her response. For Liliyn to know someone that even Silva didn't know, it must be a very old friend. From that response, Hihiro also knew why Sivan had looked anxiously at Liliyn.

“You know her.....gramps?” (Kamui)

“Yes, I didn't expect to meet her again in this place.” (Sivan)

“Same here. For you to still be alive, you must be really stubborn, huh.” (Liliyn)

“Hoh hoh hoh, to be greeted in such a manner.” (Sivan)

“Hey, you are acquaintances right?” (Hihiro)

They responded to Hihiro by nodding and saying “Ah”

“Once upon a time, for a little bit. You sure have put on a lot of years.” (Liliyn)

“Do you have any idea how many years have passed since then? Well, you have no idea because you look just like before.” (Sivan)

“Impressive, how do you know?” (Liliyn)

“I knew from your voice and atmosphere. When I lost my sight, I became sensitive to those things.” (Sivan)

“.....What happened to your eyes and legs?” (Liliyn)

Liliyn put on a serious expression while looking at him

“.....If it is possible, I don't want you to know.” (Sivan)

“Was it from the monster in the... desert?” (Liliyn)

“That’s right.” (Sivan)

“A person like...you?” (Liliyn)

“Hoh hoh, it is harder to win when you get older. Unlike you.” (Sivan)

“Fu~n, it’s only in your case, you received those wounds from protecting someone, right?” (Liliyn)

“Gramps.....” (Kamui)

Sivan tried to stop him from interjecting, yet, Kamui interrupted him and continued.

“Gramps.....protected me.....that was all. I was...too weak...that was all” (Kamui)

At that moment, his expressionless face changed as he raised his eyebrows in a painful expression. From that, they were able to identify the cause of those wounds. When he was fighting the demon, Kamui was targeted so Sivan jumped in to protect him. They were not sure what the demon did after, however, because of that, Sivan had lost his eyes and right leg.

“Kamui, my boy. As a chief, you had an obligation to protect the family. I was once the chief as well. Right now, you are the chief of this clan. As a chief, you shouldn’t put on such a sad face.” (Sivan)

Even though Sivan cannot see him, he seem to be able to feel Kamui’s pain.

“Stay vigilant and resolute, and become a reliable man” (Sivan)

“Un...I understand...sorry.” (Kamui)

“Then, don’t apologize so easily either” (Sivan)

Sivan shrugged in amazement.

“Sivan, what is the identity of the demon of the desert? Why didn’t you take part? If it’s strong then...wait, no, even if it was an SSS Rank, you would still be able to defeat it if you tried. Don’t tell me that it’s using some sort of trick. Tell me the real reason.” (Liliyn)

Her words surprised those around them. Of course, Hiroy was surprised as well. The story wasn’t the real reason and, like everyone else, he simply looked at Liliyn.

Most members of the Ashura Clan stared at Liliyn vigilantly. Yet, Liliyn completely ignored their stares.

“...As usual, you can’t hide it, can you? You are just as annoying as before, Loli-baba.” (Sivan)

“Fu~n, why don’t you suffocate to death in ladies underwear like you dreamed about, you old bastard.” (Liliyn)

They stared at each other as they felt explosive sparks being exchanged between them. Everyone around them swallowed uncomfortably. Hiiro and Silva stood silently and observed the scene before them.

(That said, for the Aka-loli to say whatever she wants around that weak old man.)  
(Hiiro)

Some people would think suffocating in a women’s underwear is something to enjoy, but to Hiiro it was something sad; very, very, sad.

They were stuck in that position for sometime, then they separated and laughed faintly.

“Hoh Hoh Hoh” (Sivan)

“Kukuku” (Liliyn)

When the dark mood suddenly dispersed, everyone around them grew surprised.

“Come with me, guests. I have something to show you all” (Sivan)

Sivan walked in a certain direction, scraping his leg along the sand. As expected, Hiiro and the group followed behind him soon after.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 86 Ashura' s Tenacity

---

Sivan guided Hiiro and his companions to a single yurt (|Ashura Tribe| Residence). The residence seemed to be three times bigger than the rest they have seen. When they entered inside, they frowned as the smell of antiseptic and blood entered their presence.

Ten men and women were lying in beds built out of grass and leaves. However, they were not simply lying down. No matter who you looked at, a part of their body was wound by blood stained bandages. Upon closer inspection, the ground seemed to have been drenched by blood in several places.

As the others saw this spectacle, Shamoe trembled while covering her mouth with both hands. Liliyn also frowned unpleasantly.

Sivan:[ This is one of the reasons why we cannot move. ~ja]

If it was only one or two injured, then it would be possible to somehow carry them. However, as the seriously injured were well over a dozen, one could comprehend that carrying them out would be no easy feat. Furthermore, from what Hiiro had heard, there were also those whose condition was so critical that moving them would prove dangerous.

Sivan:[ Of course, another reason is because the |Grave Tower| is near here. That's where the deceased family members are buried ~ja ]

Hiiro:[ You don't have a cure for this? ]

Hiiro voiced the doubts in his mind.

Sivan:[ ~ Yes we have. However, the medicinal herbs don't seem to be effective on the wounds given by the monsters in this desert... also, all of the villagers in here need the cure. Even if they searched for the cure in this desert, it's risky to send out combat capable people right now ~ja~]

Now that Hiiro thought about it, it was uncertain that such a cure would grow in center of the desert. The |Ashura Tribe| cannot go out into desert to search for the cure as a brutal monster was lying await outside the village perimeter. If they were to send out an ordinary person, it would take too much time. Thus, they needed a strong person to move.

Yet, those that fit the criteria within the |Ashura Tribe| are very few. Of course, strong people like Camus exist. However, they are in charge of preventing other intruders

from passing through the desert,so they cannot risk decreasing their gatekeepers in this desert.

[ Even so, in this Oasis, medicinal herbs grow and are used to treat the injured. Yet, this is still a terrible situation for us~ ]

[ It really is terrible.]

Hiiro crosses his arms and shuts his eyes. He was sure Liliyn and Silva were looking at him, thinking that Hiiro could cure them as they had witnessed Hiiro's recovery magic that he had showed them previously. However, Hiiro ignored them as he had no obligation to cure them.

Among the two, Silva in particular was looking at Hiiro, contemplating whether he should ask Hiiro to help the injured. He also understood that Hiiro was concealing his magic. However, many people here were on the verge of death.

In reality, Hiiro wanted to bend his principles slightly and cure these people. As Liliyn stared at Hiiro, she noticed him giving off an atmosphere that indicated he would not speak any further. She shrugged her shoulders as she made a wry smile.

[ Oi Sivan. ]

[ ~ja What is it Liliyn? ]

[ There are other reasons right? Even if the opponent is a Rank SSS monster, the |Ashura Tribe| would be able to manage if you poured all your efforts into it. So why didn't you? ]

[ ..... ]

[ There's also another thing that's strange. Even though you do not possess the power to return to active duty, I do not believe that you would be beaten by such monsters. Even if you were carrying the burden of this Tribe. Though I do not know what happened to your right leg, I did not expect you to be defeated, not to mention you losing both of your eyes... What are you hiding? ]

As Liliyn spoke those words, her eyes sparkled momentarily. Camus and the topknot man was at a loss for words upon hearing Liliyn's inquisition. Seeing their appearance, Liliyn understood that her speculation was right on the money.

Following this, Sivan took a deep breath and finally opened his mouth.

[ As one would expect of the |Red Rose Witch|. I'm really astonished by your perceptiveness]

[ ~fufun, Naturally ]

Liliyn proudly puffed her chest, her face slackening slightly.

[ ..... The monster in the desert. It is..... The Previous Chief of this Tribe ]

[ Previous Chief of this Tribe? What do you mean, Sivan? ]

Liliyn knitted her eyebrows suspiciously.

[ ~unja~ that child. It happened when Camus was little.]

Sivan soberly moved his mouth.

30 years ago, an incident occurred in the desert. It started from just one monster. That monster was a species that made the desert its natural habitat. Following this, that monster mutated and changed its form.

The name of that monster is |Desert Tortoise|. That monster's defining trait is the big shell on its back. One day, the |Desert Tortoise| who should have skin tinted green, was now filled with a hue of a toxic deep purple.

What's more, the |Desert Tortoise| was not an aggressive monster. Yet, it began to attack other monsters. Moreover, the demon wouldn't just attack. It would devour any of its defeated prey.

Following this, the attributes of the monster it had devoured would surprisingly begin to alter the body of the |Desert Tortoise|. The monster it had devoured was named |Mad Scorpion|. The attribute that had grown onto the |Desert Tortoise| was a poisonous tail.

Furthermore, another monster, the |Mad Golem|, possessed rugged skin as its trait. In the same way, that monster was also devoured. The |Desert Tortoise's| body began to mysteriously change.

The |Ashura Tribe| assumed that, should this continue, not only would the monsters in the desert be devoured, but it would soon bear its fangs towards them. As such, they decided to take this chance to slay it, while it was still underdeveloped.

The Chief of the |Ashura Tribe| at that time was Rigund. He was Camus' real father. His ability was also well known throughout the Tribe. Especially in combat, he possessed the strength that others yearned for. That kind of person was Camus' pride.

Rigund, along with his companions, headed forth to slay the |Desert Tortoise|. If it was him, the people believed that he would certainly kill it and return back safely.

However, after coming back, Rigund was in tatters. He was covered with wounds all over his body. Others were stunned by his appearance. Even Sivan could only blankly stare at him in surprise.

The people knew that the |Desert Tortoise| was strong. Yet, they did not expect Rigund's following words.

[That existence is not a naturally born |Desert Tortoise|. There is a puppeteer on it's back]

Everyone was taken aback by Rigund's word. Yet, one person moved. Sivan asked Rigund again with a stern expression. However-

\*dogogogogon!\*

They heard the roar of the |Desert Tortoise| assault them.

Moreover, the mysterious person clad in a black robe was seen standing on its shell. As everyone witnessed this, they understood that what Rigund said was true.

Camus saw his father was completely exhausted. However, seeing his comrades, anger swelled within him as Camus faced the demon. Even though his father was the strongest in the Tribe, there was no guarantee that Camus would be able to win.

Rigund turned pale as he saw Camus' actions. He desperately moved his aching body. However, he was unable to shield Camus from the attack of the |Desert Tortoise|. Sharp fingernails approached Camus mercilessly.

Camus, for the first time, felt the murderous intent behind an attack that could kill him. Camus froze in fear. Everyone thought Camus was going to die. However, at that time, Sivan appeared, barely protecting him in time.

It was because of this that Sivan's right leg had suffered injury. Furthermore, the attack of the |Desert Tortoise| had not yet ended. This time, the monster used its poisonous tail to attack. Sivan used what little strength he had to carry Camus away from that location.

Even though they dodged the tail attack by jumping backwards, in that moment, vines grew out and clung onto their feet. Sivan's movement became restricted. He determined that this was caused by magic. Following this, he traced the flow of magic and understood that the robed person was the one who had cast it. Moreover, as tremendous magic was imbued into the vines, they would not budge at all.

Sivan struggled desperately. Following this, the poisonous tail shot something at Sivan. The discharged venom splashed onto both of Sivan's eyes. He felt pain in his eyes, as if they were set on fire.

The |Desert Tortoise| used its tail again, aiming for the killing blow. In that instant, however, the tail was cut. The vines restraining Sivan were also severed. The robed person saw this and expressed their admiration.

Having saved Sivan was Rigund, his breathing disordered from pain and exhaustion. A black sword was gripped in his hand. However, in the following instance, Rigund sheathed his dual katanas and threw them to Camus. He then grabbed a curved sword beside him as he poised himself.

He spoke to his comrades, telling them to take Sivan and run away. They proceeded to recover Sivan. Camus simply watched his father's back, silently.

[ Go already! ]

[ Father! ]

Camus did not want to go. His father was covered with wounds. There was no chance of him winning this. Camus also understood that his father was buying time for the others to escape.

[ Do not hesitate! ]

[ ..... !? ]

[ You are my son! That's why you should not hesitate on what you are doing! ]

[ F... Father.... ]

Camus trembled from his father's words. He stood up and picked up the dual katanas before leaving with heavy steps.

[ hou~ Are you running away? ]

A dark, low voice entered Camus' ears. It belonged to the robed individual standing on the shell of the |Desert Tortoise|

[ Abandoning your father, you choose to ungracefully escape and survive.... ? Amusing.]

[ .... You .... ]

Camus looked back and clenched his fist. Though the person was covered in a hood, Camus was able to confirm that there was a cross wound on his cheek.

[ Camus! ]

Camus regained his senses upon hearing his father.

[ .... Listen well Camus... The Tribe... and those dual katanas... I will entrust it to you ]

[ Fa.... ther ]

Following this, he broke his difficult expression and smiled wryly.

[ Do not forget! You are my son! Therefore, you must do it without fail! ]

[ ..... ]

[ Without fail, .... you must become a good man ]

Tears began to overflow in Rigund's eyes.

[ Go.... everyone...I entrust them to you]

Camus did not turn back any longer. He parted ways, desperately running with the dual katanas in his hands.

The oasis they lived in was abandoned and was considerably far to the new oasis they had found. Thus, they began to live there. Everyone waited for Rigund to return home. However, they were shocked by the new information they received from the comrades who were patrolling the area.

An existence that resembled Rigund was found. Everyone was pleased to hear that he was alive, yet, they were soon betrayed by the following words.

[ A poisonous tail has grown from Rigund ]

When they investigated this, they determined that Rigund had been devoured by the [Desert Tortoise]. Moreover, it's appearance had greatly changed. Though it still had deep purple skin, it seemed to have morphed into the appearance of Rigund with a poisonous tail and sharp nails.

Everyone who heard that fact could not hide their shock. When the companions discovered him, he seemed to have a slight bit of consciousness remaining inside of him. They had told Rigund that they had found a safe place for the Tribe.

Following this, Rigund had apparently squeezed out his last ounce of strength in order to successfully limit the |Desert Tortoise's| range of action. Due to his magic, he was able to place a barrier where the |Desert Tortoise| could not escape from that place.

Camus and the others were unaware of how long it would last, as there were a lot of monsters to be absorbed in that place. However, they did not find what they were looking for. The robed individual. Though, according to the report, he spoke the words [ My Business here is done] before disappearing. For now, it seemed that they could experience relief.

However, even if they didn't search for monsters within the barrier, the monsters themselves would try to break out. It is possible that their instincts of survival had been stimulated by the |Desert Tortoise|, causing them to grow violent. Yet, Rigund said that they should just leave it alone.

Sivan examined Rigund's story. They tried to not aim for the |Desert Tortoise's| life. However, it was just not possible to ignore it for such a long period of time. They decided to think of a way to cure him.

Yet, Travelers began to show up after a while. As a result, they entered the barrier of the |Desert Tortoise|, they and incurred its wrath. The |Ashura Tribe| on watch at that time saw the |Desert Tortoise| had killed the travelers.

After that incident, they prevented people from entering the desert. Supposing they made the |Desert Tortoise| angry, the barrier would become ineffective. As a result, there was the possibility of it baring its fangs on them sooner.

It is for this reason that the |Ashura Tribe| created the role of a gate keeper. They believed that Rigund will return to his former self once again. As such, they have continued to search for a method that would return him to normal.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 87 Unyielding Thoughts

---

Sivan: 「Recently the barrier has had little effect. The Desert Tortoise turns violent with even the slightest stimuli. Once angered, its violence will not subside until some time has passed. Yet, if we left it alone, there is a possibility of it coming over here. Thus, those of us that can fight attempted to redirect it to another place, but...」

Hiiro: 「There were times where it failed, leading to this result...I guess that about sums it up.」

Upon hearing Sivan's words, Hiiro spoke as he was somehow convinced. As if the monsters were unaware of their existence, they faced the other direction. Even though the 『Ashura Tribe』 seemed to be drawing the monster's attention, the monsters that were asleep noticed they were under attack.

Sivan: 「Indeed. Even though I said that there were various reasons, the most important one is that we don't want to leave Rigund. Everyone thinks as such.」

Hiiro: 「But if you think about the future of your brats, don't you think this choice is wrong?」

As the man with the topknot<sup>(1)</sup> grew irritated at Hiiro's words, he glared at him while clenching his teeth. Appearing in front of such a man, Camus opened his mouth instead.

Camus: 「Yes.....it is as you say...I believe. But...dad is family.」

Hiiro: 「...then I'll ask this. Your father was eaten by that Desert Tortoise, right? Although one of the Desert Tortoise's characteristics is that it can take the form of your father. Even so, it just looks really similar to him. Can you really say that your father is alive?」

Camus: 「That's...」

Camus drooped his head with downcast eyes.

Hiiro: 「Furthermore, didn't your father say it as well? That he'd entrust the tribe to

you. Yet, the one who exposed that tribe to such risks was non other than you, Chief of the 『Ashura Tribe』 」

Topknot Man: 「What the hell would you know, bastard!？」

The man with the topknot unsheathed his Shamshir<sup>(2)</sup> as he approached Hiiro with tremendous velocity.

Hiiro: 「Shut up.」

As Hiiro said thus, he pointed his finger tip towards the man as something flew out of it. What had shot out was, of course, a word.

The topknot man's movements instantly froze. Not knowing what had occurred, he was startled. Even if he poured all of his strength into his body, it remained immobile. It wasn't paralysis. It was just that his body refused to move, as if it was completely frozen.

「Stop」 | 『止』

By using 《Word Magic》, Hiiro had robbed him of his movement. While the others had a blank expression, unsure of what Hiiro had done, Liliyn stared at him while hummed 「Hohou<sup>(3)</sup>」 with interest.

Although he would not normally use 《Word Magic》 in such circumstances, Hiiro was currently in a slightly foul mood. This became quite apparent after he had listened to their story. Thus, he took such action with little concern for the potential consequences.

The reason for this may have been because he did not care about the 『Ashura Tribe's』 current circumstances. Even Hiiro himself was frustrated as he was unsure himself.

Hiiro: 「Oi, Nitouryuu<sup>(4)</sup>.」

Hiiro called out to Camus.

Hiiro: 「Why don't you quit it with this barren life-style? Unless you, no. Unless you guys can't comprehend that the 『Ashura Tribe』 is gonna go extinct?」

Topknot Man: 「Y-you're still saying that, Bastard!？」

As it seemed that only his voice was free, the topknot man screamed. Yet, Hiiro simply pointed to a certain location with his finger. Everyone shifted their gaze in that direction. What was in that direction were...collapsed children.

Hiiro: 「Do you still not understand that you, who was entrusted with the future of the tribe, is leading it to ruin? Or can you not comprehend at all that the children are all going to die?」

As it suddenly occurred to Camus, he looked at the sleeping children, their faces distorted in pain. Within their vicinity, a person that seemed to be a mother was desperately attending to them. As she was tenderly wiping off their sweat, she tried to give them a small amount of food. However, as the children could not eat well, they rejected to drink the soup-like food.

Yet, the mother continued to give them words of encouragement, telling them to not give up. As even the mother was fatigued and was deprived of sleep, the atmosphere was clearly heartbreaking. Yet, she continued to desperately smile in front of the children.

Hiiro: 「If he saw the you right now, what would your father think?」

Camus: 「...」

Hiiro: 「If it was me, I would say this. It was definitely a mistake to entrust the tribe to you.」

Camus: 「Ku-(5)...」

Camus' expressionless face had distorted due to vexation. As the topknot man heard the children cry painfully, he could only remain silent. Liliyn called out to Hiiro in admiration.

Liliyn: 「I'm surprised, Kozou(6). I would never have thought that you'd be worried about brats that are complete strangers.」

Hiiro: 「Fun(7), that's not it at all. I'm just annoyed. Annoyed at the degree of these guys'

poverty.」

Liliyn: 「Kukuku<sup>(8)</sup>, don't say that, Kozou. Now then, that's what my companion says. What do you think, Sivan?」

Liliyn raised a question to her old friend, Sivan. In doing so, he groaned as if it was difficult to say. He began to open his heavy mouth.

Sivan: 「...no, it is exactly as that young one has said. Yes, we may certainly be poor. However, this is something that everyone desires. This decision was not Camus' alone.」

Hiiro: 「In that case, the entire 『Ashura Tribe』 are a bunch of fools.」

Topknot Man: 「I-I will no longer forgive you~~!」

As the one minute time limit of the 「Stop」 | 『止』 word's effect had passed, the topknot man began to move, once again pouncing onto Hiiro with his Shamshir in hand. However-

Topknot Man: 「...what are you trying to do, chief!？」

As Camus inserted himself between Hiiro and the Topknot Man, his attack was interrupted. Hiiro was also suspicious of Camus' actions as he stared at him.

Camus: 「The Tribe...do not insult them.」

Although it sounded like he spoke indifferently, Camus clearly wore a grim expression. Even though Hiiro's words were irrefutably sound and logical, even Camus had things that he would not yield to. He displayed his intention that he would not allow his comrades to be mocked.

Hiiro: 「You can do whatever you want, but those that purposely take actions that will lead themselves to ruin, there is nothing more foolish than them. Even if you guys claim to have your reasons for doing such things, I can only see it as absolutely ridiculous.」

Camus: 「I will not...allow you to say more.」

His hands turned towards his back, pulling out a pair of katanas.

Hiiro: 「So you want to have a go? How about redirecting that enthusiasm to subduing monsters?」

Camus: 「...shut up.」

Hiiro: 「I guess I'll just say it then? You guys simply don't want to fight that monster.」

Camus: 「Shut up.」

Hiiro: 「Because it's appearance is similar to your father...the original chief. That's why you're just hesitating.」

Camus: 「Shut up...」

Hiiro: 「Thinking that he will eventually be restored, that the chief will come back. While relying on such unfounded wishful thinking, you've been avoiding fights while pointlessly getting yourselves hurt.」

Camus: 「I'm telling you to...shut up.」

Hiiro: 「You guys are laying waste to the intentions of those that have put their lives on the line.」

Camus: 「Shut the fuck up!」

Disappearing instantly from that spot, Camus suddenly appeared in front of Hiiro's eyes before he noticed. Holding a katanas in each hand, Camus held them in a cross as he tried to slash Hiiro.

\*Kiiiiiiiiin!\*(9)

Hiiro once again tried to parry the attack, unsheathing his 『Thorn Sword - Piercer』 as he met Camus' blades.

Hiiro: (Ku-.....what power! Although I was able to defend against it cause I saw it before hand, this guy's way too fast!?)

Even though Hiiro was able to read his angered opponent's simplistic attack, he had barely managed to defend against it. The only reason for this was that was just how swift Camus' movements were.

Sivan: 「Wait, Camus.」

Upon hearing those words, Camus created distance between him and Hiiro. Following this, he looked towards the owner of the voice, Sivan.

Sivan: 「Camus, are those the actions of a chief?」

Camus: 「.....I will not...let you be insulted.」

Seeing Camus vexingly gritting his teeth as he answered, Sivan could only spit out a deep sigh.

Sivan: 「.....it can not be helped. They are guests.」

Camus: 「What?」

Sivan: 「You will not revise your thoughts, yes?」

Hiiro: 「Of course.」

Sivan: 「Fumu<sup>(10)</sup>. Camus is the same, no?」

Camus: 「Un<sup>(11)</sup>.」

Sivan once again spat out a sigh as he shrugged his shoulders.

Sivan: 「In which case, it'd be better if you went at it until you're satisfied. However, let's step outside.」

Hiiro: 「That's fine with me.」

Camus: 「...I will win.」

Hiiro and Camus glared at each other. Yet, Jin-u made an appalled expression as they cried out.

Jin-u: 「Sivan-sama<sup>(12)</sup>, is this acceptable!？」

Sivan: 「It cannot be helped. Not to mention, in times of dispute, it is better for them to clash with each other.」

Jin-u: 「B-but...」

Sivan: 「There are some things that can only be learned by colliding with fists. Is that not so, Liliyn?」

Liliyn: 「Fun, more importantly, if you're gonna do it then do it already.」

Liliyn could not help but smirk as she was looking forward to it. Undoubtedly, she was happy that she could observe Hiiro's battle. Looking at her, Sivan could only shake his head in grief.

Sivan: 「Jin-u, you'll be the judge.」

Jin-u: 「Y-yes!」

As the topknot man, Jin-u, gave his reply, brought the two with him as they walked to the desert.

Sivan spoke to Liliyn who was nearby.

Sivan: 「That young one is just like you. Holding on to his own ideas and carrying them out, not to mention his brazen attitude. He wouldn't happen to be your child, is he?」

Liliyn: 「Hohou, that's quite a funny joke. It seems as if you want the remaining years of your short life to be scattered right here, yes?」

As she unpleasantly scowled, Liliyn's thirst for blood strengthened. Sivan began to fret.

Sivan: 「It's a joke!」

Liliyn: 「Fun, exactly how am I similar to that Kozou?」

Sivan: 「I-is that so...」

As sweat unpleasantly flowed down his forehead, Sivan spat out a sigh.

Liliyn: 「Now that you mention it, even that 『Ashura』 Kozou resembled you when you were young. That honesty and straightforwardness. Even the way that you both cherish your comrades is idiotic.」

Sivan: 「Hoh hoh hoh<sup>(13)</sup>, well, he is still immature.」

Liliyn: 「Certainly, I've heard that those of the 『Ashura Tribe』 require 40 years before they become an adult. I see. So he's basically still a brat.」

When those of the 『Ashura Tribe』 reach the age of 40, their appearances becomes the figure of humans in their twenties. Even though Camus has been alive for more than 3 decades, his appearance and mentality was still immature.

Sivan: 「Seeing as you have the figure of a brat, I don't think you're qualified to say that, though?」

Liliyn: 「Shut up! As if you can say that when you can't see, you fucking straight-laced old man!<sup>(14)</sup>」

Sivan: 「Like I've said countless times, even if I don't see it, I can still feel it. You loli-baba bastard.<sup>(15)</sup>」

As the two glared at each other with sparks flying through the air, Silva was simply amazed. Shamoe could only watch them as she was constantly flustered.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 88 Unyielding Thoughts

---

Hiiro and Camus stood atop the desert after leaving the Oasis with Jin-u's guidance. Wondering what's going on, those of the <Ashura Tribe> came to observe. Among said observers were kids.

The children are, of course, cheering for Camus. As for Hiiro-

“Good luck, my Comrade !” (Silva)

“D-Do your best ! Hiiro-sama !” (Shamoe)

Silva and Shamoe cheered for him, yet, he twitched at Silva's support.

(Who the hell is your comrade....?) (Hiiro)

Of course, Hiiro understood that he meant the comrade of Liliyn's fanclub. If he hit Silva, he will only rejoice. Thus Hiiro decided to ignore him.

(Well then. More importantly, how should I fight... For now,...) (Hiiro)

As he thought thus, Hiiro used the word [Pry] . Of course, the others noticed that Hiiro used his magic. Jin-u raised his guard.

“What are you doing, bastard ?” (Jin-u)

Although Jin-u had asked him thus, Hiiro just pretended not to know anything.

“I'm just doing some stretching. Magic is allowed in this fight, right ?” (Hiiro)

“O-Oh....” (Camus)

Camus is very suspicious of Hiiro, but Hiiro ignored him.

<Camus>

<Level 85>

HP 2380/2400

MP 3270/3270

EXP 674441

NEXT 27911

ATX 588 (668)

DEF 490 (515)

AGL 800 (823)

HIT 450 (470)

INT 388 ( )

<Magic Attribute> : Earth

<Magic> : Sand needle (Earth, Attack)

Sand Wave (Earth, Attack)

Sand Armor (Earth, Support)

Sand Guard (Earth, Support)

Desert Storm (Earth, Attack)

Red Idol (Earth)

<Title>:<Ashura Tribe> | <One who lives with the Desert> | <Monster Slayer> |  
<Sage> | <Easy-Going> | <Dual Katana User> | <Red Sand> | <Chief of the <Ashura  
Tribe>> | <One who inherits their Father's Will> | <Lightning Speed>

(《称号》 アスラ族・砂漠と共に生きる者・魔物殺し・達人・のんびり屋・双刀  
使い・赤砂・アスラ族の長・父の意思を継ぐ子・電光石火)

(E: Changed the format to look more appealing? Changed the titles for consistency)

Hiiro was surprised for a bit that Camus was at level 85. However, Camus did not possess long range attacks in the superhuman class like Liliyn. There was something that's interesting in his parameters though.

(As expected, Speed is essential..) (Hiiro)

Furthermore, Camus was not even serious ,yet, He was able to see Liliyn's movement. That alone is already troublesome. Compared to Hiiro's level of 76, there was a clear difference in speed. There was over 200 points difference. Honestly, he was not someone that Hiiro could beat.

Though his attacks are not so strong, his agility is high. As he obtained the <Lightning Speed> title, that alone already explained quite a lot. Although Hiiro has already amassed quite a number of spells, Camus' magic has advantage over the earth. Hiiro wore a wry smile.

(Fighting with an Earth Mage in the desert's gonna be a pain, huh..) (Hiiro)

Everything here can be his weapon. Hiiro made sure not to forget that distance didn't matter here. Camus would probably have a way to control the sand.

Hiiro thought that this was gonna be a tough fight. For now, he prepared himself by erasing the <Magic Words> he installed on Mikazuki.

Hiiro could only set a maximum of 5 words. It was important to install them before the fight began. Liliyn stared in his direction with a face full of intrigue. It couldn't be helped if she's interested.

For now, the priority is to win this fight. Hiiro installed <Word Magic> on his arms. Then, something suddenly occurred to him.

(Maybe, I can use this desert..) (Hiiro)

"We'll start soon." (Jin-u)

Jin-u appeared in front of the two as they both nodded. Camus seems prepared. He unsheathes his twin blades as he took a defensive stance.

Watching those two, Liliyn and Sivan exchange opinions.

"Which one do you think's gonna win?" (Sivan)

"Who knows? Their power is quite similar." (Liliyn)

"Then, Camus who has the geographical advantage will be superior." (Sivan)

"I wonder about that." (Liliyn)

"Mu?" (Sivan)

"Certainly, he looks no more than an arrogant <Imp>." (Liliyn)

"Isn't that obvious?" (Sivan)

Probably, this sentiment was shared by everyone as well.

"But, he's... interesting." (Liliyn)

"Hoh, that's rare. Wait, no. There's no way you would bring normal people. Are you saying that there's something special with that youngster?" (Sivan)

Liliyn simply grinned.

“See it for yourself.” (Liliyn)

“Mu..” (Sivan)

“Even if everyone believes that boy is at a disadvantage, when the fight starts, you will be surprised.” (Liliyn)

Seeing her laugh, Sivan sharpened his sense in order to feel the “surprise” she talked about.

Hiiro unsheathed his sword as the two glared at each other.

“I... Will ..Correct you...My Family..Are not.. Idiots..” (Camus)

“I don’t care about that.” (Hiiro)

“Eh ?”(Camus)

“Right now, we’re determining which one is stronger...right ? If you want to deny it, then prove me wrong, twin blade style.” (Hiiro)

“You.. Will regret it...” (Camus)

“Sure you will.” (Hiiro)

“Guh..You will.” (Camus)

“I will not.” (Hiiro)

“You will definitely..” (Camus)

“There’s no reason to.” (Hiiro)

“There is....” (Camus)

“Ahem !” (Jin-u)

(E: Twin Blade Style, AKA Nitouryuu, is Hiiro’s nickname for Camus.)

Jin-u cleared his throat to stop them from bickering.

“Listen. The fight will be decided when one side gets knocked out (KO) or surrenders. Any objections ?” (Jin-u)

“None.” (Hiiro and Camus)

The two answered in harmony. Jin-u nodded as he took a deep breath. Everyone gulped. The fight with their honor at stake will begin. The winner proves their statement right. The loser will have to bitterly accept. Staking that, they will fight. And then, to start the fight...

“Begin !” (Jin-u)

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 89 Hiiro vs Camus

---

The first one to move was Hiiro. As he was able to predict his opponent's attacks to some extent, Hiiro acted in order to obtain the first move.

As Hiiro's right hand was already holding onto his 『Thorn Sword - Piercer』, he had instantly reduced the time required to attack. However, Camus had clearly captured Hiiro's movements in his field of view. Although he had acted slower than Hiiro, as he held his katana in a similar fashion, Camus gripped it with great force as he had also instantly drawn his weapon.

\*Kiiiiiiiin!\*(1)

As the two blades clashed, sparks began to fly. However, the colliding swords were only one on each side. Camus still had a single sword left in his other hand. While maintaining the blade deadlock, Camus moved in an attempt to pierce Hiiro with his other sword.

As Hiiro had predicted this attack, he immediately jumped back as he took distance from his opponent. Following this, Hiiro promptly applied force onto his foot in attempt to strike again. However, his right foot became buried into the sand with a \*zubo\*.

Hiiro: 「Tch-!」

A battle atop of unfamiliar sand, as opposed to one on firm ground, was far more difficult than Hiiro had anticipated. Should his application of force be improper, his foot would be consumed by the sand.

Camus: 「The sand is...alive.」

As Camus faintly spoke, this time it was he who had instantaneously moved from that spot. However, unlike Hiiro, there was no wasted movement. His speed was so great, it would make one forget that they were not fighting on top of sand.

As Camus was approaching Hiiro's chest, he instantly held up his sword in order to defend against the attack. However, Camus swung both swords with brute force. Although Hiiro had successfully deflected the attack, whether it was caused by his lack

of a good foot hold or his inability to take the full brunt of the attack, Hiiro was sent flying, rolling across the ground.

Hiiro immediately got up and faced forwards, yet, Camus was no longer there. All he could see was a shadow swiftly approaching him.

Hiiro: (What in the hell...above!?)

Sure enough, Camus had jumped up into the sky, falling towards Hiiro while trying to pierce him with his katana. He applied great force into his foot in an attempt to move away from his current location, yet, he once again felt his feet become buried in the sand.

Hiiro: (Damn! It's difficult to move!)

At this rate, I'll be skewered, or so Hiiro thought. As he had no choice, Hiiro activated one of the previously installed words, 「Protect」 | 『防』. Immediately, a pale magic wall was born, covering Hiiro.

\*Bashin-!\*([2](#))

As Camus' sword was deflected by the wall, his body was blown away, as if it was repelled. While shocked, Camus rotated his body round and round while in midair before making a superb landing.

Sivan: 「J-just now...!？」

Liliyn: 「Kukuku([3](#)).」

As Sivan was startled by Hiiro's method of defense, Liliyn emitted a beaming smile. The two's responses contrasted greatly([4](#)).

Sivan: 「Was that magic just now? No, there were no signs of any magical attribute...in which case...」

Sivan recalled that Jin-u received something that seemed to be magic. As he

remembered, he realised that even at that time, there was no presence of any sort of magical attribute.

Sivan: 「In other words, it has no attribute...right?」

Liliyn: 「Kuku, as expected, you noticed it Sivan.」

Sivan: 「I knew that you wouldn't go on a journey with just any ordinary fellow. Even so, to think you'd be travelling with a Unique Magic user is quite a shock.」

Liliyn: 「The fun part has still yet to come.」

Although he raised his eyebrows in reaction to Liliyn's suggestive words, as she was unlikely to answer anymore questions due to the current atmosphere, Sivan simply decided to look ahead.

Camus glared at the pale barrier covering Hiiro with a dubious look. As he was confused at his own attack being so outrightly deflected, Camus took some distance.

Hiiro: (Fuu<sup>(5)</sup>, that was dangerous. This fight is more difficult than I had anticipated. To think I'd be made to use the word 「Protect」 | 『防』 so soon.)

Although he was able to prevent incoming attacks for one minute, as he was also unable to participate in close combat, it was a risk. The defensive wall repels any opponents that get close to it. Well, if his purpose was to perform a body blow, then it would be sufficient.

Hiiro: (There doesn't seem to be too much damage...)

However, there are many things one can do within the time limit of one minute. Hiiro concentrated magic in his fingertip in an attempt to write words. Noticing these actions, Camus' eyebrows twitched as he grew wary.

Camus: 「What you are trying to do.....I won't let you.」

As he returned his twin katanas into their sheaths, Camus held his hand towards the ground.

Camus: 「Sand Needle.」

In doing so, the sand near his feet began to form multiple needles, all aimed at Hiiro. If one were to take such an attack directly, it would be no different than trying to hug a huge cactus.

Hiiro: (As I thought, he's an earth, no, a sand user...)

However, Hiiro did not move. The reason for this being-

\*Bashin Bashin Bashiiiiin!\* [\(6\)](#)

As the effect of the 「Protect」 | 『防』 word was still fresh and strong, Hiiro used it to protect his body from the onslaught of sand needles. As the approaching needles returned to their original smoothness, they simply dispersed.

Camus: 「Nn...hard.」

As Camus viewed the scene, he voiced his impressions as if he were muttering.

Camus: 「Then how about...this.」

Camus made an underarm throw, moving his right arm with large movements. It looked as if he were trying to scoop something up. As he did so, the sand in front of him bulged upwards, hanging high in the air as if it were a tsunami attempting to assault Hiiro.

Camus: 「.....Sand Wave.」

Hiiro: (Indeed, this is beyond him just having the geographical advantage.)

As the waves of sand came pouring down before his eyes, Hiiro turned towards the tsunami and started running towards it.

Camus watched on behind the wave as he was convinced that it would inflict a large amount of damage. However, at this time, a hole in the shape of a circle burst out of the central portion of the sand wave. Hiiro jumped out of said hole.

Camis: 「Wha-!？」

As Camus had not expected Hiiro to avoid the wave of sand, much less penetrate it, he was stunned.

Hiiro: 「5, 4, 3, 2...one minute.」

As he said thus, the defensive wall that enveloped Hiiro began to disappear. As he had counted to a minute after the activation time, even though it disappeared, Hiiro was unperturbed. Rather, Hiiro used the time limit to repel his opponents attack while approaching him, causing Camus to grow agitated.

While he poised his 『Thorn Sword - Piercer』, Hiiro rushed forward, unleashing a thrust. As the defensive wall had disappeared, Hiiro was now capable of attacking.

Hiiro: 「Gotcha!」

Hiiro launched an attack that seemed as if it would penetrate Camus' lowered guard. However, at that time-

\*Shun-!\*([7](#))

Hiiro's katana was completely unable to penetrate it's designated target. What it had pierced through was simply air.

Hiiro: (It failed-!? Where'd he go?)

In that instance, sand began to dance in midair with a \*parapara\*([8](#)). As it appeared in Hiiro's line of sight, he looked up, thinking that his opponent had jumped up in the air. However, his eyes saw no-one.

Hiiro: 「...eh?」

As he felt a chill run down his spine, Hiiro detected a presence behind him.

Camus: 「Above...you thought I jumped?」

This time, it was Hiiro who was caught completely off guard.

Hiiro: (Shit!)

Immediately activating the previously installed word, 「Speed」 | 『速』 and escaped from his current location. As he jumped without concern for his posture, Hiiro tumbled to the ground, rolling around with a \*gorogoro\*<sup>(9)</sup>.

However, as he had avoided Camus' sword strike from behind, Hiiro deemed it to be a satisfactory result.

Camus: 「.....suddenly...got faster?」

As Hiiro's speed became equivalent to his own, Camus was startled. Not understanding how his speed had suddenly increased, Camus was wary as to not approach Hiiro carelessly.

As Hiiro was Hiiro, thinking that he might have been slashed caused unpleasant perspiration to form on his back.

Hiiro: (Fuu, that was pretty dangerous just now, huh. However, that bastard...)

Hiiro wondered why Camus wasn't above him when he had thought he had taken to skies. Hiiro reasoned that Camus had probably bent down quickly, thrown sand towards the sky, and jumped towards the side all at the same time.

As Hiiro saw the sand soaring into the sky, he presumed that it was the sand produced from Camus' soles when he jumped. However, it was a ploy derived by Camus in order to make Hiiro lower his guard.

Hiiro: 「Seems that you've got a pretty sharp brain, Nitouryuu<sup>(10)</sup>.」

Camus: 「If I can use sand.....I am strong.」

While tensing his chest, Camus boasted. However, it was as he had indicated. As Hiiro had faced many predicaments because of it, he could only tense his body.

Hiiro: (Guess it's about time for me to start, huh.....)

Thinking thus, Hiiro returned his katana to its scabbard, gathering magic into his fingertip as he began to write words. Following this, he fired them straight into his feet.

Hiiro: (That's number 2 .....next is.....)

Once again, Hiiro began to write words. This time, however, Hiiro pointed his finger towards Camus.

Camus: 「...?」

Camus, warned by Hiiro's actions, became defensive. Following which, Hiiro leaped, moving to an area just above Camus. And then-

Hiiro: 「Take this!」

Hiiro unleashed the word on to Camus.

Camus: (This is.....what he used on Jin-u?)

Camus remembered his comrade Jin-u having his movements stopped by Hiiro's strange attack. Therefore, as he thought that he must absolutely not allow himself to get hit by it, Camus jumped backwards from his spot. The words stuck onto the spot where Camus was at previously.

Seeing this, Hiiro clicked his tongue audibly enough for Camus to hear as he descended onto the ground.

Hiiro: 「You're not bad. It doesn't seem like you'll be hit by that.」

Camus: 「Nn<sup>(11)</sup>.....a little while ago, Jin-u.....had trouble.」

Hiiro: 「Fun<sup>(12)</sup>. Guess that means you're not an idiot.」

Following this, Camus sheathed his katana as he narrowed his eyes.

Camus: 「Next...interesting thing...I'll show you.」

Hiiro: 「Nn?」

Camus placed his right hand on the ground.

Camus: 「.....Sand Armor - Type - Gauntlet.」

Following this, the sand moved, enveloping Camus' right hand. Camus was now wearing a gauntlet made of extremely hardened sand. As it was only his right hand that had become armed, it was swollen several times, to the point that it looked uncomfortable. It was as if the hand belonged to a golem or giant.

Camus: 「.....Sand Needle」

Hiiro: 「Tch-!!」

Spikes of sand started flying towards Hiiro. Hiiro immediately jumped to the side. However, Camus suddenly headed to towards him in that direction. It seems that Hiiro had moved accordingly to Camus' speculations.

Hiiro: 「Shi-...!?」

Camus: 「...this is the end!」

\*Dogon-!\*(13)

Hiiro: 「Gah-!？」

Hiiro was sent splendidly flying by the fist armed with sand. He received an impact that seemed to instantly blow his consciousness away. Bright red blood spewed out of his mouth. As if he were a stone skipping on water, Hiiro bounced up and down before hitting a big sand pile.

\*Dogaan-!\*

Hiiro: 「Gaha-!」

As he fell to the ground, a large amount of sand came raining down from above. Seeing that, Camus made a slight guts pose. The children started bouncing around in delight as they shared the same sentiment.

Liliyn faced the direction in which Hiiro was launched, wearing a sulky expression as she simply stared. Seeing such an expression, Sivan began to unleash words with a smile.

Sivan: 「Hoh hoh hoh(14). It looks like the match's been decided.」

Presumably due to the fact that his friend had won, Sivan spoke his feelings with joy.

Shamoe: 「Feeeee~-!(15) Hiiro-samaa(16)!」

As Shamoe's entire body trembled, she worried about Hiiro's well-being. Yet, Silva and Liliyn simply stared in the direction that Hiiro had flown off in.

Silva: 「Ojou-sama(17).」

Liliyn: 「Aah, that bastard's trying to do something.」

Sivan: 「Nn? Did you say something?」

Sivan asked thus.

Liliyn: 「Aah, the fun part's coming up so look carefully.」

Sivan: 「.....ha? The match is already-」

Liliyn: 「You've aged, Sivan. His fighting spirit has yet to waver. Rather...」

\*Dogon-!\*

As the mound of sand vigorously burst apart, Hihiro appeared with ragged breathing, his face distorted in pain.

Liliyn: 「There, see? Although it was unlikely for him to give up against an attack of that degree, it's good to see that he's still plenty motivated.」

Sivan: 「Impossible...he received Camus' blow head on...」

Liliyn: 「He instantly jumped back and escaped the full brunt of the attack. Even so, it looks like he received quite a considerable amount of damage. Kukuku.」

After heaving a large sigh, Liliyn stared at Hihiro, who had re-established his breathing.

Liliyn: (Now, show it to me. Show me what you were trying to do just then.)

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 90 The Conclusion

---

Camus thought that he had finished Hiiro. However, it seems that his attacks were too shallow. In which case, he will just attack again. However, this time, he would make sure he would get a direct hit. That's what Camus thought while staring at Hiiro.

Yet, seeing Hiiro's eyes, Camus changed his mind. There was a thirst for blood dwelling within Hiiro's eyes. Camus assumed that Hiiro wouldn't fall for the same attack twice. Hiiro's eyes conveyed that if Camus were to approach him, Hiiro would make him regret it. It was true that, as long as Camus had not confirmed the identity of Hiiro's magic, it would be dangerous to focus on close-quarters combat.

“Approaching....Dangerous ? Then, with my sand...I will finish it !” (Camus)

The sand on Camus' right hand scattered as it fell onto the ground. After seeing that Camus had no intention of approaching him, Hiiro faintly smiled.

(It was effective..however, I have also made my preparations as well. This time, I will let you taste my true power.) (Hiiro)

He wrote <Speed> twice, activating them consecutively in order to create a synergetic effect.

Hiiro flew straight towards Camus. However, Camus pressed his hand onto the ground.

“How bold....Here I go.” (Camus)

Camus discharged his magic power. He intended to use the same magic, yet, it seemed like the situation didn't turn out as he had expected.

“...eh ?” (Camus)

sfx ; Shi~n !

The sand wouldn't listen to him. There was no response at all. Then, he suddenly felt something odd with the sand underneath his feet.

(The sand... is hard?) (Camus)

He touched the sand with the tip of his toes in order to confirm it. As expected, he could feel that the sand had become harder than he had expected. It was similar to the dirt found on normal ground. As Camus was bewildered by the sudden change in the sand, Hiiro had already approached him.

Sfx : Dosu !

“Kaha-!?” (Camus)

Using the momentum from the rush, Hiiro punched Camus in the stomach. Camus let out a big breath due to the sudden attack he received.

“Confirm your footing clearly, Nitoryuu?” (Hiiro)

“Gu....?” (Camus)

While holding his belly, Camus attempted to leave that place immediately. However, Hiiro pursued him as he tried to land the final blow.

(Ku-...compared to before...it's faster !?) (Camus)

Camus was reduced into a state of panic. This frenzy was caused not only by Hiiro's Hiiro's abnormal speed boost, but because Camus was no longer able to use his sand for his magic.

Sfx : Baki-!

This time, it was Camus who got blown away by Hiiro's punch to his face. He tried to rotate his body in order to safely descend. However, the moment Camus landed, in front of him was Hiiro's fist.

Sfx : Dogo- !

Upon receiving another blow to his stomach, Camus once again released a large breath.

(Why.. is he..so fast ?) (Camus)

Seeing Hiiro's sudden change, Camus ground his teeth as he thought Hiiro was going easy on him until now. He thought, at this rate, he was going to get beaten up as much as Hiiro desired. For now, he needed to place a large distance between them first.

After he escaped, Camus took out his katanas as the pain in his stomach distorted his face. However, in the very next moment, the blade was pulled by something.

“-!?” (Camus)

The source of the pull was coming from the ground below. However, there was nothing there but the sand on the ground. Camus thought the reason the katana fell into the ground was because he hadn't gripped it strongly enough. Camus hurriedly tried to pull it out of the sand, however, it seemed that its weight increased considerably.

“You sure it’s alright to look away ?” (Hiiro)

When Camus quickly turned his head, Hiiro’s kick imminently approached. Then-

Sfx : Doga-!

“Gaha-!?” (Camus)

Being kicked in the face, Camus was launched off into the distance. He tumbled across the sand, just like Hiiro had before. Blood flowed from his mouth. He was unable to stand straight. Hiiro faintly smiled as he spoke say..

“I told you, right ? Watch your footing.” (Hiiro)

“...-eh ?” (Camus)

In the next instance-

Sfx : bushubushubushu-!

“T-That’s.. this is...My...?” (Camus)

Numerous sand needles appeared from under Camus’ feet. Camus realized that it was just like the magic he had used before. While he was trying to figure out how Hiiro was capable of using it, Camus received several wounds on his body.

One sand needle directed itself at Camus’ neck. It didn’t stop at his neck, rather it was stopped from reaching his neck. Where it to continue its path, Camus would have undoubtedly died.

Camus stood shocked as he had no idea what was even going on anymore. He had already sustained countless wounds on his body. He did not have his katanas. Furthermore, due to the last attack, he no longer had any strength left.

“It’s...my defeat..” (Camus)

Not only Camus, but everyone who observed the fight were shocked by the results, their mouths gaping wide. It was as if time had stopped. Following this, Hiiro spoke softly...

“It’s.....my win.” (Hiiro)

In that moment, the match had truly reached a conclusion.

(Fuuh. Seems like it went well...) (Hiiro)

This time, the fight proceeded as Hiiro had planned.

First, Hiiro would confirm what Camus would use the sand. In doing so, his primary objective would be to analyze precisely what Camus would react. That's why Hiiro confronted Camus' katanas with his own. He wanted to understand Camus' movements and thoughts.

Following this, as Hiiro couldn't simply allow himself to receive Camus' magic head on, he planned on using the word <Protect> in order to grasp the magic's casting intervals and special characteristics. However, since the footing was worse than he expected, Hiiro was unexpectedly forced to use the <Protect> word earlier.

As Hiiro had somehow succeeded in agitating Camus enough to make him use his magic. Using the word <Protect> to defend, Hiiro was able to identify a flaw in Camus' magic while successfully lowering his guard. It was at this time when Camus used his magic tsunami. (X): No. This is not the skill name. Raw : それが津波のような土の魔法の時である。)

At that time, Hiiro wrote a word and shot it below Camus' feet. As it was an installation word, it disappeared, absorbed by the ground. Hiiro then cut through the tsunami and rushed towards Camus. However, to Hiiro's genuine surprise, Camus avoided his attack.

Even though Hiiro attacked from an opening in Camus' defences, Camus managed to avoid it. Hiiro then wrote another word and, once again, shot it under Camus' foot. This was the second installed word.

Afterwards, Hiiro wrote another word and jumped right above Camus. The word was aimed and shot at Camus. However, he managed to avoid it as the words disappeared into the ground once again. This was the third and final word installed. In actuality, Hiiro clicked his tongue in order to prevent Camus from realizing what he was doing. Hiiro thought that if he appeared to be frustrated due to the fact that he missed, Camus would lower his guard.

At that moment, Hiiro thought that everything was in order. He didn't expect Camus to counter attack. Receiving an attack from the Sand Armor, Hiiro was almost rendered unconscious. He swore to pay him back in full.

The next phase of the plan depended on timing. Yet, by some luck, Camus decided to use a long-range attack after looking into Hiiros eyes. It seemed that Hiiro's act of pouring the feelings of 'do not come closer' into his eyes was effective. In addition, Hiiro could only grin as he saw the place where Camus was standing. The reason for this was because that was the spot where Hiiro had placed the trap.

He immediately activated one of the installation words, <Solid>. The sand suddenly hardened. It seemed that Camus wanted to use his best move, yet, the sand would not respond to him.

The reason for this was because the sand around Camus was no longer the sand he was familiar with. It was essential to be able to form an image when using magic. It seemed that Camus' magic allowed him to control the sand freely. However, as he could not imagine how to control sand as solid as concrete, Camus' magic misfired.

Magic is the process to completely understand and operate a phenomenon. However, Camus was unable to understand the state of the sand at that time. As a result, he was unable to move the sand. Of course, it was still sand. If Camus understood its true nature, he might have been able to move it. (XJ: Mahouka Koukou no Reitousei?)

However, as Camus still had some MP remaining, he was confused as to why his magic misfired. Since he couldn't calm down and analyze the situation, he was rendered unable to manipulate the sand.

Given this chance, Hiroyuki intended to pay Camus back for the attack he received a while ago. He used two <Speed> words to create a synergistic effect and rush in to punch Camus in his abdomen.

Of course, Camus definitely attempted to escape. However, Hiroyuki attacked Camus in order to corner him into the place that Hiroyuki had prepared earlier before he launched another attack. When he escaped to that place, Camus should feel something unnatural happening to his katanas. Because of that, the katanas fell to the ground.

That was to be expected, Hiroyuki had used the word <Magnetic>. Camus felt that his katanas were being sucked into the ground. If it was the normal Camus, he wouldn't have dropped it. However, as he had taken damage, his strength was depleted. Being unable to maintain a strong grip on the katanas, Camus helplessly lost against the magnetic force. As expected, he managed to deprive Camus of his katanas.

Then, in order to deliver the final blow, Hiroyuki attacked him once more. Of course, Camus was launched to the place Hiroyuki wanted.

This time, the word <Needle> was invoked. The reason Hiroyuki wanted to use this was because Camus was a practitioner of sand magic. Hiroyuki wanted to harass Camus by casting a spell identical to his own. Hiroyuki judged that it would reduce Camus' fighting spirit. As a result, it had somehow turned out well. Hiroyuki had won. All according to plan.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 91 Camus' s Resolve

---

“Well...”

Jin-u, the observer, stared at the situation with his eyes wide open in surprise. He turned his head slowly toward Hiiro.

“Oi, it’s over” (Hiiro)

“N-no way...chief...” (Jin-u)

“Are you listening?” (Hiiro)

“Chief...” (Jin-u)

He doesn’t seem to be listening at all.

“...Huh, guess I’ve no choice.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro shrugged as he sheathed his sword. He then slowly moved towards Camus. The sand needles that surrounded Camus faded back into the ground. Camus, who seemed to be supported by the needles, collapsed on to his knees.

“Oi.” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Camus)

Camus lifted his face and made eye contact with Hiiro. His face was expressionless as usual, yet, his eyes were clouded with tears. It was certain that he was still mortified by his loss.

“Disappointed?” (Hiiro)

“...Mortified.” (Camus)

“Well, that’s because I’m strong” (Hiiro)

“I’m...also strong” (Camus)

“Even so, you lost to me.” (Hiiro)

“I...I wasn’t serious yet.” (Camus)

“Even so. The one who lost this battle was you.” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Camus)

Hiiro picked up the pair of swords nearby and tossed it back to Camus.

“You said it before, right? You’ll protect your tribe.” (Hiiro)

“.....un...” (Camus)

“That includes all of the children that adore you as well, right?” (Hiiro)

“Of course.” (Camus)

“But if you keep going like this, they’ll die in the near future.” (Hiiro)

“N-no way! I’ll protect them!” (Camus)

“Even though you lost to me?” (Hiiro)

“That...that’s because...that...” (Camus)

Unable to come up with a reasonable excuse, Camus lowered his head.

“You’re not protecting them.” (Hiiro)

“...eh?” (Camus)

“Even if you say you’re protecting them, all you are doing is putting them in danger.” (Hiiro)

“...then what should I...do?” (Camus)

“Don’t be naive. Think for yourself.” (Hiiro)

“...”

As Camus responded while wearing a depressed expression, Hiiro could not stand seeing him in such a state. He began to involuntarily speak what was on his mind.

“If it were me...I would eliminate any and all obstacles standing in my way.” (Hiiro)

“Eliminate...obstacles? All of them?” (Camus)

Camus looked at Hiiro with a startled expression.

“Aa, all of them. I’m a greedy person. I’ll take what I want and I won’t give it to anyone. Therefore, I won’t let anyone take anything away from me. By doing this, I will protect everything” (Hiiro)

Hiiro and Camus looked at each other. The silence between them lasted for a moment. Then, unlike before, Camus’ eyes lit up with life.

“...Name, can you tell it to me?” (Camus)

“.....Hiiro. Hiiro Okamura” (Hiiro)

“Hiiro...Hiiro...it’s Hiiro. Un...I’ll remember it.” (Camus)

Camus looked at Hiiro with a sincere expression.

“I’m...Camus” (Camus)

“I know. But you’ll be called twin-blade.” (Hiiro)

“Muh...Call me Camus” (Camus)

“I refuse. If you want to be called that, then make me recognize you” (Hiiro)

“Recognize...?” (Camus)

At that moment, two children from the crowd ran towards the two.

“Camus Camus~!” (Child A)

“Are you okay?” (Child B)

“Kora~. Your next opponent is me !” (Child C)

The children, wanting to protect Camus, stood between the two as they glared at Hiiro with animosity.

“Chief, are you okay?” (Child C)

“Un. You guys...should stop.” (Camus)

Camus scolded the children

“Eh, but, but-!” (Child A)

“That is right. He bullied Camus Camus!” (Child B)

“Uun. It’s fine...Hiiro is...a guest” (Camus)

The children looked at Camus with a blank expression

“Nh? Is that so?” (Child A)

“If Camus Camus says so, then...” (Child B)

“I-I guess so...” (Child C)

The children seem to reluctantly accept Camus’s response. However, one of the children still glared at Hiiro as they spoke.

“G-got it!? Camus Camus said it’s okay, bu~t don’t get cocky.” (Child B)

“Shut up, brat!” (Hiiro)

As Hiiro returned the glare, the children cried “Hyi!” (TL: fearful/childish “Oh Crap!”) before hiding behind Camus.

“It seems like we’ve finally arrived at a conclusion.” (Sivan)

As Sivan spoke, Liliyn also reacted.

“But, as expected of the 《Red Rose》. To find someone like that. I wasn’t expecting Camus to lose.” (Sivan)

“Hmph. I told you before, right? That you’ll be able to see something interesting.” (Liliyn)

“Hoh Hoh Hoh, that seems to be the case, huh.” (Sivan)

Sivan turned to face Hiiro as he spoke.

“That aside, ever since I met him, I’ve felt something strange coming from him. Who exactly is he?” (Sivan)

“I have no obligation to tell you.” (Liliyn)

“I also...want to know.” (Camus)

Camus, whose eyes sparkled(KiraKira) with child-like curiosity, had unknowingly appeared beside her, surprising the two.

“About Hiiro...can...you tell me?” (Camus)

“...I refuse. I’ll think about when you are also recognized by me.” (Liliyn)

Camus lowered his eyebrows regretfully. However, he made a declaration.

“Nn...I’ll make sure to hear it someday.” (Camus)

It seems that Camus had decided on something. However, Hiiro simply looked at Camus with an amazed expression as he let out a sigh. Liliyn then slipped closer to Hiiro and spoke in a small voice, similar to a whisper.

“As expected, you really are interesting.” (Liliyn)

“...I don’t know what you’re talking about.” (Hiiro)

This time, although Hiiro was annoyed by the fact that he had to improvise throughout the fight, he had inadvertently allowed Liliyn to see him use his magic several times as a result. Knowing her, she was most likely able to grasp the characteristics of Hiiro’s  
《Word Magic》.

(Well, she doesn’t seem like someone that would reveal someone else’s secrets. Although it’s irritating having her watch me all the time, I guess I can let it go) (Hiiro)

With that decided, everyone returned to the Oasis.

“Hi,H-H-H-Hihiro-sama! I am so glad you are safe!” (Shamoe)

“Nofofofofo! As expected from Hihiro-sama! I believed in you, Nofofofofo!” (Silva)

As he thought they were too noisy, Hiiro looked at Shamoe and Silva who were making a ruckus. Hiiro wanted to relax and rest near the bank of the lake when he returned to the Oasis, yet, the impression of the last battle was so vivid in the mind of the two that they began to ramble about it.

“Shamoe...Shamoe...when you were sent flying, Shamoe’s heart almost stopped!”  
(Shamoe)

“Nofofofofo! When that happened, I too almost forgot to breath!” (Silva)

“It would have been great if you died like that, though.”(Liliyn)

“So harsh! Those words are too severe, Mistress! Nofofofofo!” (Silva)

Hiiro thought that it was excessively noisy as he covered his ears. Thinking that he'd have to deal with these three throughout his journey, Hiiro began to feel a queasy sensation in the pit of his stomach as he exasperatingly sighed.

"Hiiro...for a little bit...can I talk to you?" (Camus)

Camus approach Hiiro alone.

"What is it?" (Hiiro)

"I've...decided" (Camus)

"...decided what?" (Hiiro)

"I will...also protect" (Camus)

"Protect what?" (Hiiro)

"Everything. I'm also...greedy." (Camus)

Listening to the response, Hiiro involuntarily grinned.

"Have you told this to anyone else?" (Hiiro)

"I told Jii-chan. Jii-chan said...charge forward with...what I want to do." (Camus)

"I see." (Hiiro)

Hiiro looked at Camus's face. He was clearly older than Hiiro, yet, in Hiiro's eyes, he was still immature. No one would believe that a juvenile like Camus would be the chief of a tribe.

However, in reality, Camus currently holds the fate of his tribe within his hands. Such a Camus has now made a decision. In addition, the cause of that decision was undoubtedly himself. This was something that both Hiiro and Camus understood clearly.

"...Then, are you going to do it?" (Hiiro)

"Un....I...we will...defeat the monster of the desert" (Camus)

Indeed, it was something that they had agreed on. Protect everyone. There is a monster in the desert that can attack at any time. When it attacks, they would fight to escape and then find somewhere safe to reside in for a period of time. This was one way to protect his tribe. However there was always the chance that someone may get injured or killed during the monster's assault. It was also clear that hiding in the shadows of monster would do nothing but hurt their pride and limit their possibilities.

In order to truly protect them, there was no choice but to eliminate the threat. If they couldn't leave the desert yet still wanted to live in peace, then they had to get rid of a potential catastrophe.

That was the decision that Camus made in order to protect the children's future. However, there was clearly some danger involved. Their opponent was a monster who absorbed the powers of the previous chief. Everyone was wary of the power that the previous chief possessed. If the Ashura group had participated in the battle, even with some risk, they might have been able to defeat it.

However, Camus, before today, was unwilling to take that risk as he would have to face a monster that resembled his father. But today, he had arrived at a decision. In order to protect the future of the tribe, he had to defeat that monster. Even though, the monster looked like him, it was not his father. Camus realized that the monster is a monster. He realized that through Hiiro. In order to protect the tribe, he needed to move forward. As he was told thus, he made this decision.

That aside, there was clearly a huge risk. Camus knew that if everyone fought the monster, then they would be able to defeat it somehow. However, there was a high chance that someone would get hurt or killed in the battle. Because of this, he faced Hiiro and spoke.

“Hiiro...lend me your strength.” (Camus)

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 92 United Front

---

Camus looked at Hiiro. Honestly speaking, Hiiro had a hunch it might turn out like this after Camus had found the determination to take action. However, Hiiro closed his eyes and spoke.

“I have no obligation to help you.” (Hiiro)

“...Please” (Camus)

“Nope, no way. I do not work for free. Rather, why not ask that Baba-... I mean small person over there?” (Hiiro) [TL: Babaa – Hag, granny ]

“I can hear you, you bastard... How about I put you in an eternal sleep? Nn?” (Liliyn)

A monstrous killing intent assailed Hiiro. Hiiro hesitated, contemplating whether it was a mistake to correct himself by calling her small fellow.

“Although I don’t want to admit it, that person is strong. She can even clean up that monster without any problems.” (Hiiro)

“Oi, don’t drag me into this. Did you really think that I would bother with such a troublesome matter? No! I have no interest in monsters or anything of the sort! Therefore, I won’t even lift a finger! Kuhaha!” (Liliyn)

“Yo! As expected of Ojou-sama! Even saints would faint in front of such arrogance!” (Silva)

“Ojou-sama~! How splendid!” (Shamoe)

“Kuhahaha! Praise me more! Hahahahaha!” (Liliyn)

Watching her laugh loudly as she was praised by her attendants, Hiiro felt like he was getting a headache. He made a mental note to not become like her.

“Uun... I want Hiiro” (Camus)

“Nn? Me?” (Hiiro)

“Un.” (Camus)

“Why?” (Hiiro)

“Why.....Why?” (Camus)

“No, I’m the one asking here...” (Hiiro)

Camus tilted his head and blankly stared at Hiiro, Hiiro already understood what Camus was so perplexed about..

“Anyway, I will-” (Hiiro)

“Then, what should I do?” (Camus)

“Huh?” (Hiiro)

“What should I do..... to have you come with us?” (Camus)

“.....” (Hiiro)

Hiiro once again realized just how stubborn Camus was. As he did, he had a great idea

(Speaking of which, I just leveled up a lot. I want to try that out... but...)

Actually, when Hiiro won the battle against Camus, he gained a few levels .. Since Camus was of a higher level than Hiiro, he was able to get a lot of EXP from defeating him.

“Let’s see. How about you become my underling?” (Hiiro)

“Eh? Underling?” (Camus)

“Nah, I’m just joking.” (Hiiro)

“I will.” (Camus)

“Just a joke.....Huh?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro could only stare at Camus completely speechless. His eyes looked serious, if anything, it feels like they are sparkling in happiness, but it may just be Hiiro’s imagination..

“O-Oi...” (Hiiro)

“I will become... underling. So, your strength... lend it to me.” (Camus)

Hiiro completely meant it as a joke. Hiiro knew that having a tribe chief becoming an underling wouldn't happen. So, Hiiro threw it out there to get some time to think of what to ask in exchange for his assistance.

However, when you looked in Camus' eyes, one could clearly see that he was being serious.

“Hey now, you do understand, right? You, the chief, to become some random traveller's underling, there is no way your tribe could agree with that, you know?” (Hiiro)

“Un... that's right.” (Camus)

“Hey, don't just say... 'that is right' ...” (Hiiro)

Whenever Hiiro had to deal with Camus, his pace would completely get thrown off.

“But... I decided to... be greedy.” (Camus)

“Huh?” (Hiiro)

“If it was only us...it'd be dangerous. But,... if Hiiro comes... the risk of us getting wounded... decreases.” (Camus)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“I will protect... everyone. In order to do that... I will use any means available. What Hiiro spoke of...greed... is just like that.” (Camus)

Normally, as a leader, their pride wouldn't even allow one to lower his head like this. It was hard to believe, that someone would be able to accept something like this so easily.

However, Camus was willing to take any means necessary in order to protect his tribe. Even if he has to throw away his position or pride and allow himself to be used by Hiiro, he was willing to accept it all to protect everything.

(Haha...this kind of foolish greed also existed, huh.)

It certainly was Hiiro who gave him that advice. However, Camus came out with an extremely direct interpretation of it. Hiiro couldn't help but laugh at how pure Camus was.

Seeing Hiiro grin slightly, Camus tilted his head sideways..

“Haha, man, you're quite an interesting guy, aren't you.” (Hiiro)

“...Really?” (Camus)

“Aa, let’s go with that. However, will it be fine for you to decide to become my underling all by yourself? No, you talked about it with the blind old man, right?” (Hiiro)

“Un... but everyone will agree with it. After all... it’s for peace.” (Camus)

Hiiro looked into Camus’ eyes. They were totally sincere and not even a wisp of hesitation could be seen in them. He was simply driven by the desire to protect his tribe. Camus was completely different from the hesitant person before.

“Haha, you’re quite an honest guy. ... Alright. With this, you will be my underling from now on.” (Hiiro)

“Really?” (Camus)

“Yes, it was quite unexpected, but I will take this as payment. I will also need to live up to your expectations. ”

Camus made a victory pose to Hiiro’s positive answer. To Hiiro it was fine either way. However if he rethinks about it again, he can obtain delicious food and obtain various information from them so it turned out to be an excellent trade. Another thing that put him into an accepting mood, was because he leveled up.

“Seems like you have finished talking.” (Sivan)

Looking for a gap to step in, Sivan walked over to the two. On his side, there were others of the Ashura tribe, including children.

“I talked with everyone. Though, there are some who still don’t agree.” (Sivan)

“That’s right! Why should Camus Camus become that guy’s underling!”

“Chief! We can handle the monster of the desert by ourselves!” (Jin-u)

One of the children and Jin-u complained, but Camus raises his hand to silence them.

“No... I already decided. When it comes to protecting everyone... I will do anything.” (Camus)

The Ashura watching Camus could feel his decisiveness and were unable to say any more. However, the children still said what they honestly thought.

“But, are you fine with that Camus Camus! Becoming that guys underling...” (Child A)

“That is right! Camus Camus is the tribe chief!” (Child B)

“Nn... It’s alright.” (Camus)

While saying that, Camus placed his hands on the children’s head.

“Hihiro is..... interesting”

The children were rendered speechless by Camus’ comment. Sivan was the only one smiling as he turned to Liliyn.

“Liliyn, your companion is lending his power but you aren’t going to?” (Sivan)

“Fun, why would I need to bother with such a troublesome task? In the case of monsters and the like, my minion Hihiro will be more than enough.” (Liliyn)

“Oi, who are you calling YOUR minion!?” (Hihiro)

“Nh? Hihiro is... her underling? Then, Am I also... her subordinate? Hmm? Eh?” (Camus)

Confused about how the relations worked out, numerous question marks floated above Camus’ head.

“But, are you fine with that?” (Sivan)

“With what, old man?” (Lilyin)

“The monster of the desert is really strong. I did see that youth’s ability, but I am still uneasy. After all, it has absorbed Camus’ father Rigund.” (Sivan)

“Fun, like I care about that.” (Liliyn)

“Oh, then what are you going to do if the youth happens to die? Isn’t he the object of your interest? If he dies, you’ll be bored again.” (Sivan)

Sivan says that to Liliyn, while rubbing his chin.

“Mu...Muu.” (Liliyn)

Lilyin deeply pondered what Sivan said. At long last she found something that interests her. Hihiro, what’s more she decided to follow him on his journey. Moreover, the journey had just begun. When Liliyn thought of losing her rare toy here, uneasiness flowed into her heart.

“I-it can’t be helped. Silva!” (Liliyn)

“Yes.” (Silva) [Butler]

“You’ll be helping them.” (Liliyn)

“Certainly.” (Silva) [Butler]

“Oo~h, as expected of the Red rose witch being so generous!” (Sivan)

“Hmpf, it’s a given! My heart is deeper than the sea! Kuhahahahaha!” (Liliyn)

Hearing Liliyn’s words Sivan did a small fist bump. Liliyn, who hadn’t notice that she had been manipulated by Sivan, was laughing in high spirits from the praise. Honestly speaking, Sivan wanted to have Liliyn lend her own strength, but judged that this was better than nothing.

(Besides, that butler... his existence feels strange like the youths. Well, he can’t be a common person as Liliyn has taken him to her side.) (Sivan)

Sivan thought he could increase the fighting force, and greatly increasing the odds of winning against the Desert monster. He felt relieved, that by stirring up Liliyn, he pulled Silva in as well.

“By the way, where’s the monster?” (Hiiro)

Jin-u expected the question and answered

“It lies in area called ‘Boulder desert’ east of here.”

Like its name implies, ‘Boulder desert’ is an area, where many huge rocks reside. Near it there’s an oasis where the Ashura tribe originally dwelled. And, one of the large rocks there is named ‘Grave Tower’ where the deceased sleep.

The [Grave Tower] was located a notable distance from the monster. But because there was a chance 1 in 10000 that the [Grave Tower] may be destroyed in battle with the monster. No one in the [Ashura Tribe] had the motivation to engage the monster.

“I see, because there are large rocks all over the places, we would be able to set up an ambush ” (Hiiro)

Sivan nods at Hiiro’s analysis.

“It is certainly so. However, the monsters of the desert have troublesome abilities, and the Desert monster has absorbed many of them.” (Jin-u)

“It’s as Sivan says... but on top of that... the most difficult one... is dad’s power.”  
(Camus)

“Power? Do you mean magic?” (Hiiro)

“Yes. Same as... mine.” (Camus)

Hiiro thought that it would be really dangerous. Not only does the monster have the abilities of many other desert monsters, but can use sand magic, which is advantageous in the current terrain. Because Hiiro fought against Camus, he fully understood its potential.

“...We should decide who will go.” (Hiiro)

“Hohou, for what reason?” (Liliyn)

Liliyn admiringly asks for the reason behind Hiiro’s decision.

“Hindrances only makes this harder.” (Hiiro)

The Ashura was angry at Hiiro’s statement. However, Liliyn gives a nod while grinning.

“Kukuku, won’t you just obediently say that you can’t protect everyone alone?”  
(Liliyn)

“Shut up. It isn’t just that. Certainly numbers increases the strength, but that also depends on the enemy.” (Hiiro)

“N... What do you mean?” (Camus)

Camus asked while he tilted his head.

“The monster can use the same magic as you, right? Using it in desert will be effective against both single and multiple targets with all the sand. Also wasn’t your father very skilled at using sand?” (Hiiro)

“Yes. Dad is... even more skilled at wielding it than I.” (Camus)

“Then it’s clear that even if we attack in a huge group there’s a high risk for casualties before we can even deal any damage. And, it’s not just the casualties that will be the problem but also having the shock of seeing someone close to you die. Even you, can you say that you will stay calm when you see the monster that has the appearance of your father wounding or killing your tribesmen?” (Hiiro)

“I don’t know... if I can.” (Camus)

Camus looked down and clenched his fist hard. Even if it isn’t his father, seeing someone with the same appearance cut down your tribesmen one after another might, cause Camus to lose himself.

“That’s the most troublesome aspect. Also, are there any others who may have the resolution to kill the monster with appearance of the former chief?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro’s question caused a commotion in the Ashura. There were some who also turned pale. All of them have been indebted to Camus’ father, and some have had their lives saved by him. Whether they could suppress their feelings and take the monster’s life, is what worried Hiiro.

That is exactly why Hiiro judged that, they should decided who to take with them. If someone who hasn’t made up his mind participates, they’ll only turn into a liability.

“And there’s one more thing. Among your people who are currently wounded, are there anyone with a strong will?” (Hiiro)

“Eh?... Yes.” (Camus)

“But you still lost. In other words, the monster is stronger, and that is exactly why there shouldn’t be any hesitation in killing it. Nitouryuu, didn’t you say that you don’t want your tribe to get harmed? Then, you should head out only with a small number of people, in general your best. It’s up to you to select the ones who are strong and are willing to confront the monster and return safely” (Hiiro)

“..... I understand. Everyone... are you still fine with this?” (Camus)

Camus turned to his tribe and asked. Listening to the talk, they were unable to hide their troubled expressions. They look at each other, and questioned themselves whether they can really kill Rigund.

Among them, there was one who immediately came out and knelt in front of Camus.

“Chief, I, Jin-u, have already prepared myself for this.” (Jin-u)

“Jin-u...” (Camus)

“The previous chief... Rigund was a person whom I admired, and the one I desired to become like. But now, he must be suffering after having his mind corrupted from being turned into a monster. And, that can be said for the current chief as well. Since that happened, you were suffering all this time. I have entrusted my life to the chief from the beginning. Please use me however you see fit. Together let us free Rigund!” (Jin-u)

“...Jin-u... Thank you.” (Camus)

He closed his eye momentarily, but it was only for a moment. Then, he stared directly at Jin-u

“But,... don’t tell me to... use your life.” (Camus)

“Chief...” (Jin-u)

“I... think you should take care of your own life. So... don’t die, Jin-u” (Camus)

“... I understand.” (Jin-u)

Watching the exchange between the two, the others also started to show a will to participate. However, Camus refused them by shaking his neck.

“I have something... for everyone to do.” (Camus)

“Yes. The monster of the desert possesses an ability to call other Monsters. Your role will be to prevent them from getting near Camus’ group. Leave handling the monster-... Rigund to Camus and Jin-u.” (Sivan)

Each one of them reluctantly nodded to Sivan’s statement. However with this it seems to have been decided who will face the monster of the desert.

Afterwards, they spent some time figuring out the most effective way to fight and it ended off with Hihiro summarizing it all up.

“I’ll sum it up. For the ones who can fight, we’ll leave only a minimum number to defend here and the rest will go to the surrounding area of ‘Boulder desert’. There, we will engage the monster. The ones who will be fighting the monster are me, The Old-Man, Nitouryuu and Topknot.” (Hihiro)

“T-top knot...?” (Jin-u)

Jin-u didn’t seem happy with the nickname. However, Hihiro continued with the explanation.

“The monster of the desert has the ability to call other monsters out, and if it ends up being used and other monsters come, the Ashura on the outside will take care of them. You got that?” (Hihiro)

Everyone nodded in agreement.

“Boy, you don’t need to worry. If they turn out to be useless, I will take care of the small fries” (Liliyn)

The Ashura become very motivated when Liliyn said so. They wanted to show her not to underestimate them

“What, you’ll be also coming along?” (Hiiro)

“Of course. I couldn’t be missing out on this interesting show, right? Kukuku.” (Liliyn)

“Fuhn, what a wicked loli.” (Hiiro)

“Sheesh. As usual this ba-baa is only driven by her own desires.” (Sivan)

“Did you kids say something?” (Liliyn)

For Liliyn to calls even this old man Sivan a kid. Just how long has she lived...

“U-um, um, um, what should Shamoe do...?” (Shamoe)

“Shamoe, you will stay safe behind me, and calm down” (Liliyn)

“Y-yes! I will do my best to to stay calm!” (Shamoe)

Even though Shamoe answered with great determination, she didn’t know the meaning of the words she used. She’ll only be a burden so she’s meant to just quietly stand by.

“Okay, if you are ready, let’s go.” (Hiiro)

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 93

### A New Word Magic Ability... and Title

---

Rocks of huge and small variety were lying around. Despite calling them small, they were still about the size of a person, the larger ones being close to ten meters tall. Counting through them one by one would be an endless job, however, the desert monster was lying somewhere among them.

Hiiro: (《Boulder desert》, huh... It's exactly like that.)

While endless number of rocks kept appearing in the distance, Hiiro was thinking of the battle strategy.

Hiiro: (First, we need to find the monster itself... however, before that-)

Hiiro noticed that he had leveled up after he won from the fight with Camus. Because, he was currently thinking about the new ability his 《Word Magic》 had gained.

Hiiro Okamura

Level 81

HP 1720/1725

MP 3000/3000

EXP 600976

NEXT 21707

ATX 504 (566)

DEF 405 (420)

AGL 637 (639)

HIT 356 (639)

HIT 356 (364)

INT 555 (559)

《Magic Attribute》 None

《Magic》 Word Magic ( | One Word Chain (Unlocked) | Air Writing (Unlocked) | Parallel Writing (Unlocked) | Two Word Chain (Unlocked) | Simultaneous Invocation (Unlocked) | Invocation Management (Unlocked) | Three Word Chain (Unlocked) | )

《Titles》 Innocent Bystander | World Traveller | Word Master | Awakened One | Ripper | The One Who Imagines | Killer of the Unique | Gourmet Bastard | One Who Follows His Own Path | Friend of the Fairies | Mikazuki's Owner | Monster Slayer | Wanderer | Lightning Speed | Sage | Little Girl Killer<sup>(1)</sup> | One Who is Skilled in Magic<sup>(2)</sup>

And so, as per expectations, Hiiro had gained new abilities. Hiiro chuckled to himself as he had determined that fighting Camus was the right choice.

However, there was a title that caught his attention. Putting aside the last one for the moment, the title 《Little Girl Killer》 was a bit concerning. For some reason, Hiiro felt irritated<sup>(3)</sup> about those words. Although it was Hiiro's nature to confirm something that bothered him, yet, at the same time, Hiiro felt that he would regret confirming the meaning behind those words.

Even so, he almost unconsciously clicked the words 《Little Girl Killer》 with his finger.

《Little Girl Killer》<sup>(4)</sup>

You seem to be an existence that are blessed by, and attracts, little girls<sup>(5)</sup>. In the eyes of little girls, your charm has suddenly increased<sup>(6)</sup>. This is surely because you are also a Loli--<sup>(7)</sup>

With a snap, Hiiro canceled the explanation interface.

Hiiro was troubled. What is this? He thought that god was teasing him or something<sup>(8)</sup>. If it really turned out to be the case, he swore in his mind to serve punishment for them with the character 「Curse」 | 『呪』.

However, as he had previously thought, Hiiro was now regretting confirming the title<sup>(9)</sup>.

Hiiro sighed heavily. After he escaped from reality for a short period of time, he finally proceeded to address the main topic. Hiiro forcefully persuaded himself that this next part would be very enjoyable for him. Following this, the newly added 《Three-Word Chain》 of 《Word Magic》 was clicked.

《Three-Word Chain》 MP Consumption: 600

It was now possible to write and connect three words. Similar to the two word skill, the effective range, influence, and versatility of the spell improves, although the effect duration still depends on the words written. When this ability has been unlocked, the restrictions place on two word spells are lifted. Up until now, if you were to use a two

word spell, the words installed using the 《Invocation Management》 skill loses all of its effect. However, this restriction is now released. Instead, this restriction now applies to three word spells. Additionally, the abilities of 《Simultaneous Invocation》 & 《Invocation Management》 now apply to two word spells. However, the installation limit of setting 5 words doesn't change for 《Invocation Management》. Furthermore, in regards to the 《Simultaneous Invocation》, please exercise caution for there are certain words that cannot be used.

Basically, the restrictions of the 《Two-Word Chain》 skill are now applied onto the 《Three-Word Chain》 skill. However, if the process of writing the words was interrupted, the 《Rebound》 would decrease all of his status fields by 30%. Furthermore, Hihiro would be rendered unable to use magic, as well as being inflicted with a random Abnormal Status. The Abnormal Statuses that may be inflicted include: Severe Pain, Paralysis, Sleep, Blindness, and Confusion. This Abnormal Condition would last for duration of 1 hour, while the reduction in stats and inability to utilise Magic would last for a period of 6 hours.

This 《Rebound》 was quite typical, or so Hihiro had thought. He would be subjected to risk even if he attempted to use it. It wasn't as if his status would simply be reduced, nor would he be rendered unable to use magic. The problem was the 'Abnormal Condition'. In particular, the confusion and severe pain caused would leave him at a disastrously high risk for a 1 hour period.

Hihiro: (No, the possibility of it being paralysis or sleep exists, but...blindness....haa, no matter what it is, it'd probably mean certain death if I got it in the middle of a fight.)

Although he could probably endure pain, it was undeniably certain that his movements would be hindered. Even after the the affliction had dissipated, Hihiro would most likely be left fatigued and vulnerable. Either way, the necessity for Hihiro to experiment and experience this at least once remained. Rather than having a unknown abnormality, it would be more easier to prepare if he knew what the disorder was. That way, he would somewhat be able to calm his uncertainties.

Hihiro: (Even so, I'm grateful for the fact that I can now install two word spells.)

With this, Hihiro was now able to implement a large array of tactics, allowing him to display even further cheat-like behaviour. Furthermore, his installed words had expanded to encompass 《Multiple Words》. In other words, apart from the one word spell, the continuous writing skill had now become available to Hihiro.

Up until now, whenever Hiiro attempted to use a two word spell, he could not use any other words. No, although he could activate and use other words, the effects of the two word spell would be cancelled. However, this limitation had now been released.

Now, if, for example, he were to use the word 「Flight」 | 『飛翔』 to fly, he would still be able to activate words such as 「Explosion」 | 『爆』 or 「Speed」 | 『速』 . However, as there seemed to be words that would not have this ability, there was a necessity for Hiiro to perform many experiments.

However, the limitations of this seemed to be naturally obvious to Hiiro. If he were to approach an enemy using the word 「Transparent」 | 『透明』 before casting the spell 「Sleep」 | 『寝』 , then he would be so invincible, it would simply be ridiculous. Of course, if his target was one of the magically sensitive 『Evila』 , then they might be able to somehow deal with Hiiro's tactic. Nevertheless, Hiiro deemed it to be too unfair.

Hiiro: (Kuku<sup>(10)</sup>, this is really a Unique Cheat, huh.)

Even with such a restriction applied, Hiiro couldn't help but involuntarily grin at the tremendous versatility of his own magic. Although there were many methods of execution that would deliver a harsh 《Rebound》 should they be improperly handled, as long as one cautiously used it, the effects that it supplies are quite significant.

Yet, there was an important point that needed careful attention. This point addressed MP Consumption. The new title that Hiiro had just obtained, the one called 《One who is Skilled in Magic》 , seems to apply adjustments to his MP. Even though it appeared to further increase his MP, even after he had levelled up, Hiiro could still not afford to use his 《Word Magic》 frequently.

The reason for this is because from the very beginning, 《Word Magic's》 MP consumption was significantly high. Even though he possessed several MP recovery items, it would still required Hiiro to create time to be able use them during combat...

Hiiro: (Wait, I guess I could use the word 「Protect」 | 『防』 while taking the recovery items...)

Such issue was easily resolved. Yet, even so, the fact that Hiiro had a large MP Consumption would not change. If he wasn't constantly paying attention, there was always the possibility of Hiiro having a depleted MP gauge when he let his guard down. As it seemed that there might not be enough MP to utilise during important times, it may prove fatal in this world.

Furthermore, although this time he was now able to cast three word spells, the MP consumed was 600. No matter how one thought about it, it could not be considered normal. If Hihiro were to use 《Air Writing》 in conjunction with this skill, the MP cost would be  $600 + 100 = 700$  MP. This meant that he could only use this combination of skills 4 times if his MP was completely full.

Hihiro: (I guess this is what they call the price of omnipotence<sup>(11)</sup> huh.)

As Hihiro had a limited supply of MP recover agents, he determined that he must make effective use of them. Even so, it would not change the fact that his ability was a cheat.

Hihiro: (Now then....this time, I guess I'll be experimenting against the Desert Monster, huh....)

As Hihiro's party arrived at the 《Boulder Desert》 area, they stopped as they arranged themselves, seemingly without spirit.

Camus: 「Everyone... move as planned.」

The 『Ashura Tribe』 nodded at Camus' order and moved out from that spot. They swiftly headed to their positions. The only ones that remained were Hihiro, Liliyn, Silva, Shamoe, Camus and Sivan. Only these six.

They surveyed the desert, yet, the desert monster could not be seen. It may be hiding among the large boulders. Meanwhile, Liliyn called out to Hihiro.

Liliyn: 「Oi<sup>(12)</sup>, kozou<sup>(13)</sup>. Are you planning on slaying the monster? 」

Hihiro: 「No, I'm merely assisting them.」

Liliyn: 「Then, that fellow will deal the finishing blow...huh? 」

As she spoke those words, she turned her glance towards Camus.

Hihiro: 「That's right. This is the 『Ashura Tribe's』 problem. Then this problem, should be resolved by the 『Ashura Tribe's』 Chief himself. 」

Liliyn: 「Hou<sup>(14)</sup>. But can that guy really kill it? Even though his father is dead, from what we've heard, it appears to have taken on his father's appearance.」

Hiiro: 「 It seems so. 」

Liliyn: 「 But this fellow values the tribe above all else. Wouldn't it be quite a difficult opponent for him? 」

Hiiro: 「 ... Who knows. However, this would be the so-called turning point 」

Liliyn: 「 The turning point? 」

She knitted her eyebrows as she looked up at Hiiro.

Hiiro: 「 Aa<sup>(15)</sup>. If he turned away here, that means he would continue to live while being unable to kill his father 」

Liliyn: 「 However, in that scenario, the tribe would spend everyday frightened by the monster. If they allowed the monster to run wild again, it was possible that they would be annihilated 」

Hiiro: 「 Aa. If they choose to fight now, it will no longer be possible to turn back. Though I asked those fellows, it seems the barrier is made of that guy's father's life. Seems to be already reaching its limit. If we provoke the monster this time, even if they ran away, it would be sure to follow in pursuit. 」

If that were to happen, their oasis would be found, placing the tribe in danger. The children would also be helplessly killed.

Hiiro: 「 Even if you advance by one step from here, the only road left to you is to defeat the monster. If they moved back from here, they would only gain a brief period of peace. However, even if they did advance, the only options left before them would be whether they defeat the monster or not.」

Liliyn: 「 So it's either Heaven or Hell...huh? 」

Hiiro: 「 So it seems..... apparently that guy's already made his choice. 」

Upon seeing Camus' eyes, there was no hesitation present. Hiiro slowly approached

him.

Hiiro: 「 It seems like you've got your resolve, huh? 」

Camus: 「 Nn<sup>(16)</sup>... I have. I....will defeat it. 」

Jin-u: 「 Chief, even though I'm inferior, I shall also assist you! 」

Camus nodded slightly in response to Jin-u's words as he stared ahead.

Camus: 「 ....Let's go! 」

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 94

### Confrontation, the Demon of the Desert

---

Liliyn and Shamoe were to watch from afar, so they were left on standby in the previous location. Hiiro's group was to follow Jin-u's leadership. Behind Jin-u was Camus, then Hiiro, and finally Silva, who covered their tracks as they trekked across the Desert.

(There are a lot of obstacles here. This garden of rocks may put us at an advantage, but if the other side is intelligent, then that advantage disappears.)

If it was even able to absorb Regund's knowledge, and thought patterns, then the battle would be the same as fighting a human. For that reason, the other side may be able to use tactics as well. Hiiro's party could hide in the shadows of the rocks to close the distance and launch sneak attacks, but if the enemy possessed human-level thought, they would be able to enact countermeasures.

The group gathered around a single large rock, and observed their surroundings.

"Last time, he was lurking in the sand dune ahead." (Jin-u)

Jin-u says as such, while facing Camus. Sure enough, there was a large hill of sand in front of them. Nearby, a monster called a Mad Scorpion was wandering around, leisurely lifting its multiple appendages to proceed forward. Then at that moment...

~Swish!

From the sand, something resembling a tail emerged. It wrapped around the Mad Scorpion's body, and began giving off a poisonous violet aura.

"KIIIIIIII!?"

The Mad Scorpion cries as it desperately flails its body around, but its legs only touch air. It tries to escape from the tail's clutches in midair, but in the next moment, the owner of the tail showed himself.

"It's the Demon of the Desert!" (Jin-u)

As Jin-u's words, reach Camus's his face stiffens.

"... Father."

Hiiro carefully observes the Fiend. It definitely looked more like an 『Evila』, than a monster.

It had a freely extending prehensile tail, and a body covered in tough scales. The traits of the 『Ashura Race』 was still visible, a flat forehead, and above was a head of white hair that didn't give off a sense of life. In contrast, his pure red eyes surely conveyed a strong desire to live.

Drool drips from the monster's mouth as he retracts his tail, and lifts his feet, which were furnished with sharp claws.

(...Hm? What's that orb?)

From what Hihiro could see, there was an orb the size of a fist embedded in the pit of the monster's stomach. And the orb appeared to be going through a steady cycle of expansion, and contraction, almost as if it were a beating heart.

“Oy, what's that pulsating ball on its abdomen?” (Hihiro)

“We presume that that is the monster's core.” (Jin-u)

Hihiro confirmed his suspicions with Jin-u's words.

“So all I have to do is break it?” (Hihiro)

“Most likely...” (Jin-u)

“Most likely?” (Hihiro)

“In the past, my comrades tried aiming their attacks at the orb. But they weren't able to leave a single scratch on it.” (Jin-u)

“I see. I thought it was blatantly displaying its weak point, but it's not that simple. That orb's defense must be quite high.” (Hihiro)

“The cause is probably... that.” (Jin-u)

“Hmm?” (Hihiro)

Jin-u has a difficult expression, as he points to the monster.

“Look.” (Jin-u)

Sand circles the monster's feet, and it rises to cover its body. After a while, its whole body is coated in sand, and the sand's color begins to change back to its violet coloration.

“What is that?” (Hihiro)

“You saw, didn't you? It's a long duration Sand Armor.” (Jin-u)

Hihiro narrows his eyes, and stares at the monster once more.

“So he can collect sand like that dual-wielder over there?” (Hihiro)

“Right.” (Jin-u)

Though the monster's appearance hadn't changed in the slightest, there was definitely sand circulating over his body. It was the same magic Camus had used on his right arm in the fight before.

"But, double-sword boy had sand clearly visible on his arm." (Hiiro)

His fist had become giant like a golem's, so it was quite obvious. But the monster looked no different than before he cloaked himself.

"That's... Father's Sand Armor." (Camus)

The one who answered was Camus. He had a slight bitter expression floating on his face.

"Sand Armor... if trained... appearance doesn't change." (Camus)

"Gathering sand, and compressing it to the very limit. That's Regun-sama's Sand Armor. An unimaginable amount of sand is currently being gathered around him." (Jin-u)

"I see. So that's what's raising his defense." (Hiiro)

Hiiro understood why Jin-u called that skill the reason. The core appeared to be out in the open, but around it was a firm coating of sand.

The monster applied more power to its tail, and the Mad Scorpion was cleanly cut in half. It fell to the ground, although even now, it continues to try and escape. But the monster approaches it, and shoves it into its mouth whole. It appears that he's currently scavenging for food.

His tail twitches back and forth as he appears to be happily enjoying his meal. Within a minute, the Mad Scorpion, which was around the size of two grown men, had vanished completely.

(So he's surrounding himself with sand... Then we'll have to do something about the sand first. With that up, I'm not sure that even 『Sleep(眠)』 will get through to him.)

《Word Magic》 generally activates on contact. When Hiiro fought the Red Boar a while back, he was able to use 『Sleep(眠)』 to silence it, but that was because the character had cleanly impacted the boar's body.

If it had hit clothing, or something else, the effect would not have transferred. The effects only manifest on the thing it hits. So in order to put the Monster to sleep, they would have to deal with the sand and hit him with magic directly.

(『Burst(爆)』 and 『Flame(炎)』 have a large area of effect, so it doesn't matter what they hit in order to activate, because the effect of the word will still affect them, but...)

Regardless of if they wanted to attack the core, or put it to sleep, they would have to deal with the armor. And Camus and the others were thinking the same.

They were quietly observing the monster from behind the rocks, when Hiiro noticed something strange. The monster's tail was buried in the sand. No more accurately, it had burrowed into it.

(What is... w-wait, is it!?)

Hiiro predicted what was going to happen next. But he was a too late.

~Kabow.

Something erupted out of the sand from beneath the group's feet. It tries to wrap around Camus's legs. Because it had emerged behind him, Camus wasn't able to react in time.

~Swish!

Just as Camus's body was about to be grabbed, the one who saved him... was Jin-u. Because of that, Camus was able to evade the attack, but the one who fell prey to the tail was Jin-u.

“Ku!”

The tail coiled itself around his leg.

“Jin-u!” (Camus)

Camus falls on his back, and cries out. The tail began reeling Jin-u in. It appears that the Demon of the Desert had long-since noticed their presence.

“Damn! We're charging, Dual-Wielder! Old Man!” (Hiiro)

“Y-yeah!” (Camus)

“Understood!” (Silva)

In order to keep up with Jin-u, the trio left the rocks, and ran towards the monster. Jin-u himself was lying on the ground, covered in the sand he had been dragged through.

“Don't waver! Our first goal is to retrieve that Topknot guy!” (Hiiro)

“Yes, I'll have you give him back!” (Camus)

The monster turned its back to the party. He steps on Jin-u as the man writhes in pain.

“Gurururu...”

With a sound like that of a lion growling, the monster turns only his head to face the group. Its face was definitely that of a monster. A face that would inflict fear into the heart of any man. But still, there were traces of the individual known as Rigund left in it.

“F-father...” (Camus)

Camus swallows his spit, as he unintentionally lets out these words.

“Don’t misunderstand, dual wielder.” (Hiiro)

“Eh?” (Camus)

“That right there’s just a monster.” (hiiro)

“... Right.” (Camus)

“If you don’t do anything, the Topknot’s going to die, you know.” (Hiiro)

“!!? ... I won’t let him!” (Camus)

He drew the pair of swords from his back, and pointed their ends at the monster. The monster responds by displaying clear animosity towards him. It was at that moment that Jin-u regained conscience, and turned to Camus. Thinking that an opening had been made, he took his own curved blade off of his back, and swung at the beast, but...

“Wha!?” (Jin-u)

As if the monster had noticed his intent, it swung its right arm down on him like a hammer.

“Jin-u!? Get away from him!” (Camus)

Camus rushed forward with unbelievable speed, and tried to cut the tail in order to free Jin-U. But in front of him, a large wall of sand emerged.

“T-this is... Sand Guard!” (Camus)

He stopped his feet, but Hiiro, who was by his side, scolded him.

“Don’t stop! Head straight for it!” (Hiiro)

Around Hiiro was a light blue barrier of magic. Camus looked towards him, and understood what he was going to do. He fell in line behind him, and kept running forward.

Hihiro wore a wall of protective magic as he collided with the wall. And just like the time with the wave of sand Camus used, the wall... didn't part.

Camus couldn't hide his confusion at witnessing it. He was shocked at how his sand could be defeated, yet this monster's could not. Of course, Hihiro was also shocked at the current situation. But while he was a bit surprised, he still kept his composure.

(As I thought. 『Protect(防)』 only works when guarding against an attack, but this wall of sand wasn't made to do harm. It's good that I foresaw this.)

The word 『Protect(防)』 could avert blows, but it can't be crashed against other walls for offense. It only responds to moves made with the intent to attack. As Hihiro had a hunch, he wasn't too flustered. He just wanted to try it for argument's sake. So at this point, he had already prepared another word on his finger. He pointed his hand, and fired it.

“Now! Rush through!” (Hihiro)

“Eh? B... but!?” (Camus)

“Trust me. Aren't you my subordinate!?” (Hihiro)

“... Yeah!” (Camus)

Camus rushed into the wall at full force. Before impact, he swung his sword as if to cut it down, but it went through without resistance as if he were cutting through tofu.

What Hihiro used was 『Soft(柔)』. It was a word he had experience using. With it, he was able to turn hard objects soft.

“Haaaaaaaah!”

Camus breached the wall, and cut at the monster's tail before his eyes.

“Kuh! It's hard... but...!” (Camus)

Perhaps the monster had had absolute confidence in its wall. It's body had gone stiff for a moment after the wall was breached.

Camus used both of his arms, and put in all his power. And finally...

His blade pierced cleanly through the sand wrapped around the tail. Camus kicked the monster away, took the weakened Jin-u over his shoulder, and made some distance.

# Konjiki no Word Master

---

## Chapter 95

### Resolve

---

The monster, who was slightly knocked back, scowled at Camus

Desert Monster [ Guraaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa! ]

As things didn't go its way, a current of anger flowed through the monster as it became enraged. As if expressing irritation, it showed off the severed tail that swung hummingly from side to side.

Camus [ Are you okay? ]

Jin-u [ C-Chief.....I'm sorry. ]

Jin-u's face was distorted by pain as he apologized while bitterly thinking he had caused someone trouble.

Hiiro [ Oi, what's that? ]

Taken aback by Hiiro's words, they glanced in the monster's direction. The sight that met them had shocked them both.

Desert Monster [ Gurururururu! ]

Somehow, the severed part of the tail had grown back.

Hiiro [ Oi Oi, it can even regenerate itself? I guess the usual methods won't work, huh. ]

Silva [ How shall we proceed, Hiiro-sama? ]

Hiiro [Let's see, I've got something in mind, but.....]

Honestly, if all he had to do was kill it, Hiiro could somehow manage it alone. However, in this case, he had restricted himself to being a helper since the |Ashura Tribe's| Chief Camus was the person expected to defeat the monster.

Silva [ As I thought, we will be exclusively supporting Camus until the end? ]

Hiiro [ Hou, you seem to understand, huh Jii-san. ]

Silva [ Nofofofofof! Well then, let us try our best to do that! ]

At that moment, the shadow at Silva's feet twisted and coiled upward into his hand, taking the shape of, what appeared to be, a table knife.

Silva [ Lets go! Chaotic Butler toss! ]

Silva flew up into the sky as dozens of knives rained down upon the monster. However, the wall of sand materialized next to the monster once again, blocking them.

During this, Hihiro approached Camus and whispered to him.

Hihiro [ Listen up – similar to before, I'll make the sand surrounding its body become soft. Although the sand covering the tail seems to have quite a lot of strength, it's got nothing to do with defeating him. As such, your attacks should pass through. Focus all your efforts into piercing the core. ]

Camus [ .....Got it. ]

As he took his hands away from Jin-u, he glared at the monster with a piercing gaze.

Hihiro [ When I give the signal, move forward. ]

Camus [ Yes. ]

Although Silva was still attacking, when the wall of sand suddenly collapsed, the monster was nowhere to be seen.

Silva [Mu?]

Upon also noticing the situation, Silva furrowed his brow

Dobaa-!

Silva [ What is going on!? ]

The monster somehow flung itself upwards underneath Silva while he was still in the air. It appears that the monster had burrowed itself under the sand. The stinger on its tail pierced Silva's body.

Silva [ Muu! ]

As expected, Hihiro also opened his eyes wide upon witnessing such a sight. Certainly, the monster's stinger was similar to a mad scorpion's. Upon lodging its stinger into the body, it would release a paralysing neurotoxin that deprives the victims movement. Following this, it would seem that the scorpion would then eat its prey, little by little. A similar stinger was currently lodged in Silva's body.

Of course, Camus began to move in an attempt to try and save Silva. However, Hihiro stopped him by holding his arm in front of Camus.

Camus [ Hiiro.....? ]

Hiiro [ Be still. ]

Camus [ But.....Jii-chan is..... ]

Hiiro [ Listen.....be quiet and watch. ]

Camus tilted his head, giving off the feeling that he did not understand what Hiiro's was talking about. Why shouldn't he try to save a wounded ally? Although he doubted Hiiro's actions, Camus looked up and watched Silva and the monster.

Desert Monster [ Gururururu! ]

Silva [ Gufu....uh... uu... ]

Silva looked like he was going through intense pain. Looking at it, you would think the monster already had him. However, he somehow grabbed the tail.

Desert Monster [ .....? ]

Silva [ Ku.....Nofofo, did you perhaps think that I was taken out? ]

Silva, who was just suffering a second ago, loosely puffed his mouth.

Silva [ Shall I hold onto this dangerous thing? ]

As he said thus, Silva lifted his right hand, as if he were lifting a wineglass. Following this, a black sphere appeared in his palm. It seemed to be about 20cm in diameter. Next, he gripped the tail with his left hand. Finally, the globe disappeared as it was absorbed into the tail.

Silva [ Pool Ball..... ]

At that moment, an extremely thin rectangular object appeared from where the sphere had been absorbed. It was clearly caused by the black globe absorbed a moment ago.

The black rectangle quickly sliced apart the monster's armor. It was like paper being cut with a razor. Once again, the monster's tail was severed from its body.

Desert Monster [ Gura-!? ]

Silva [ On account of this sultry embrace, kindly separate from me. ]

Buuuun-!

The black rectangular object morphed back into a sphere and shot out like a cannonball.

Doga-!

The monster's body bent forward as the sphere superbly struck the monster's stomach. The attacked monster had a dumbfounded expression, as it crashed into the ground without any means of protection.

Silva, who was stabbed by the monsters stinger, nonchalantly left the location .

Hiiro [ Oi, isn't there something stuck in your stomach? ]

Silva [ Oya? How inconsiderate of me. ]

Silva gently plucked the tail out of his body and tossed it on the ground.

Hiiro [ Heh, you were fine after all ]

Silva [ I'm afraid I am not fine. It made a hole in one of my good suits... ]

Hiiro [ .....You're basically unharmed.....Seriously what in the world is your body made of? ]

Silva [ Nofofofofo! It's because I am a butler! Nofofofofo! ]

After he spoke these words, Silva was dismayed due to the fact that he will be scolded by Ojousama about his tattered uniform. Meanwhile, Camus and Jin-u were blinking in surprise as they watched the embodiment of strangeness known as Silva.

Camus [ Eto.....you are.....fine? ]

Camus couldn't bear remaining silent and asked thus. However, Silva, who seemed to have his usual appearance, expressed a smile.

Silva [ Nofofofofo! My apologies for having worried you! As you see, I'm quite well! ]

When Hiiro saw how he bowed politely, he did not notice anything abnormal in his physical condition. Although he wasn't surprised at this inexplicable situation because he'd seen it before, it was different for the other two. Still, Camus could now understand the reason Hiiro stopped him from helping Silva.

Camus ( He was trusted.....by Hiiro.....That's somehow nice..... that sort of thing )

As Camus had definitely felt their mutual trust, he was slightly envious of it.

Hiiro disregarded the gaze of the pair who seemed to want an explanation since he did not have time to explain in detail. Their top priority was to eliminate the enraged existence in front of them.

Hiiro [ Jii-san, can you destroy that monster's wall of sand again? ]

Silva [ Nofo? Most certainly! ]

Silva headed toward the monster again after he said that.

Hiiro [ Listen, I'll say it again. We will have a chance after this. Promptly....Kill it. ]

Camus [ u.... un ]

He swallowed loudly before nodding.

Immediately after Hiiro confirmed his response, he channeled magic into his fingertip.

|Tracking| |索敵|

Hiiro ( With this, I can find it no matter where it hides. )

In response to Silva's knife attack, the monster erected another wall of sand, all according to plan. Following this, it then disappeared by once again diving into the ground. However, this time, Hiiro's senses were able to capture the monster's position. It was as if his eyes were capable of locating his target's position via use of Thermography. Hiiro knew that it was moving through the sand with incredible velocity.

Hiiro [ ..Alright. ]

Hiiro quickly wrote a word and waited for the moment when the monster tried to go out of the sand. Following this, Hiiro clenched his fist in anticipation. And,

zoba-!

At the same moment the monster came out of the sand, Hiiro vanished. He then reappeared next to the monster. He had used the character |Transfer| |転移|, a two word spell he had set up before this fight. He was thankful for his lvl 80 abilities as he was now able to instantly activate |Two-Word Chain| spells without having to write them on the spot.

The monster's eyes were wide with surprise when Hiiro suddenly appeared before it. Following this, Hiiro pointed his fingertips at the monster. Hiiro proceeded to shoot the other word he had written. Normally, he would be hard pressed to hitting such a quick foe, however, it was currently caught off-guard. The situation was similar to how a moving car is unable to make a sudden stop.

Hiiro ( In other words, it can't avoid this! )

Hiiro activated the effect of the word he set up before teleporting close to the monster. He used |Soft| |柔| - the same one he had used before. With this, the defensive power of the sand armor was nullified.

Hiiro [ Next is this! ]

The back of Hiiro's fist shone as he activated another word he had set up using ||Word Magic||.

|Colossal Strength| |剛力|

He felt power gather in his right hand.

bakiii-!

Hiiro's fist shot towards the face of the monster, upon impact it made an unpleasant sound, as of flesh and bone being smashed. Blood trailed behind the monster as it was sent flying away.

dosun-!

It plummeted to the ground and created a plume of sand. With the defense of the sand armor nullified, in addition to the increased attack power from the word |Colossal Strength|, the monster received a lot of damage, even though the soft sand broke its fall.

The monster rose unsteadily.

Hiiro [ Here's another one! ]

Hiiro used |Air Writing| to write |Hard| |固| and shot it at the sand under the monster. Like the time with Camus, it has now been rendered unable to manipulate the sand.

Hiiro [ Now! Do it! ]

Hiiro shouted at Camus who was nearby waiting for orders. Hearing the voice, Camus narrowed his eyes and gripped the twin katanas in his hands.

Camus [ .... Daddy ]

From where he was standing, Camus charged full-speed at the monster. The pulsing core in the monster's stomach was reflected in his eyes. As far as Hiiro was concerned, the sand's defensive force was practically non existence. Furthermore, the monster could no longer erect a defensive wall as the sand had been rendered unusable due to the word |Hard| |固|. If Camus reacted too late, he might suffer some damage. However, if he attacked now, he would definitely defeat the monster.

Camus [ .....kill....I will kill it ]

In that moment, the question of [Who was he to kill?] surfaced in his mind. Following this, his father's smiling face flashed before him. A nostalgic scent tickled Camus' nose.

Camus [ .....Daddy.....? ]

Everyone thought it was over. Thanks to Hihiro's plan, they were perfectly prepared. Although Jin-u suffered a little damage, no one was killed. Above all, they were all liberated from the monsters terror.

Watching from afar, the people of the |Ashura Tribe| were confident in their victory.....until just now.

Involuntarily, everyone stiffened at the unforeseen spectacle reflected in their eyes.

Hihiro [ That idiot! ]

Hihiro was the only one that, in response to that spectacle, had...actually, Hihiro couldn't help but reveal his frustrations towards the author of such a spectacle.

Because next to the monster's core, the crossed katanas had stopped. Looking closely, the monster was still standing. Although it wasn't that the monster somehow stopped the attack. Actually, Camus intentionally stopped his ongoing assault.

Camus [ ku.... ]

His dual katanas trembled slightly. No, it wasn't just the katanas, it was Camus' entire body that was trembling. Still leaning forward, his face was slightly raised. Even though his eyes were set on the monster, Camus' face was distorted by sorrow.

Camus [ ...I can't.....do it. ]

Also puzzled by the unexpected action, the monster remained still.

Camus [ Because..... Daddy.....his smell was there... ]

Hihiro [ What are you doing! Quickly! Give it the finishing blow!]

Hihiro descended from the sky and shouted at Camus.

Camus [ I....I.... ]

As he said thus, a single teardrop was shed from Camus' eye.

Camus [ I.....can't do it.....Daddy... ]

Upon seeing the tear, the monster was taken aback. In that moment, Hiiro clearly felt the monster's blood thirst diminish. However, this was truly only for an instant. The monster's lust for blood and rage surged, surpassing their previous levels.

Following this, the imperceptibly regenerated tail's stinger moved in an attempt to stab Camus.

Jin-u: [ CHIEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEFFFFF!!!!!! ]

Jin-u embraced Camus as he jumped to the side. However, they did not completely dodge it. The stinger had gouged a chunk of flesh from Jin-u's back.

Jin-u [ Guu-! ]

Camus [ Jin-u!? ]

The two simply fell to the ground in such a state. Camus used his body to cushion Jin-  
u's fall.

Hiiro [ Jii-san! Buy me some time! ]

Silva [ As you command! ]

It would seem that Silva grasped the current situation. He created another one of those knives and threw it. However, the monster avoided it by jumping away from its current location.

Hiiro ( Chi, and just like that, it's already recovered! )

The monster appeared to have recovered from Hiiro's attacks as its movement had been restored

Desert Monster [ Gururururu! ]

As the monster provokingly looked at Hiiro and the others, it opened its mouth wide and-

kiiiiin-!

It released a considerably high pitched tone. As they were struck with an unpleasant, almost ear-ringing sensation, Hiiro involuntarily frowned.

Hiiro [ I-I see, this is! ]

At the same time Hiirō realized the meaning of the monster's behavior, in response to the monster's cry, similar cries sounded nearby. Following this, the sand from both

sides of the Desert Monster ascended into the air with a bashing sound. From within the sand, new monsters emerged.

Hiiro [ As I thought, this is the monster's ability to call reinforcements! ]

Silva [ It seems to be so. Apparently, they are coming here in groups from afar?]

It was as Silva had indicated. Even though it was quite a distance away, they were able to discover several monster-like shadows scattered here and there.

Upon confirming thus, there were people that could be seen attacking the monsters in the distance.....they were the |Ashura Tribe|. This situation was one that they group had more or less expected. As such, it was unlikely that the surrounding monster's reinforcements that headed in this direction would not be capable of approaching Hiiro's location.

Hiiro (Maa, Aka-Loli did say that she'd move if push comes to shove. I guess it should be fine to ignore the other monsters. The real problem is.....these three here.)

Naturally, one of which was the Desert Monster. With regards to the other two, one was a giant monster known as the |Gray Golem|. The remaining monster was called |Mud Man|, a monster that possessed a mud-like body.

They had only heard about the information regarding these monsters from the 『Ashura Tribe』. They were Rank S monsters. In all honesty, they had wanted to resolve this before the Desert Monster had called for reinforcements. However, now that it has come to this, it was imperative for them to think of an alternative method to resolve the situation.

Hiiro [ Jii-san, mind me leaving the rest to you for a bit? ]

Silva [ ...What are you planning to do, may I ask? ]

Hiiro [ I'm gonna give that idiot a wake up call. ]

As he shot those words out while wearing a disgruntled expression, a blue vein surfaced onto Hiiro's forehead.

Silva [ Nofofofofo! Oh dear, oh dear In which case, I shall also strive to try my hardest. ]

As Silva sharpened his gaze, he stood in front of the three monsters. Upon seeing this, Hiiro changed the direction of his body quickly before moving his feet. In front of the direction he was heading in was.....the place where Camus was currently in.

Upon seeing Jin-u raising a voice of agony due to receiving the attack from the stinger, Camus was flustered. As Jin-u's face grew pale, the wounds he received on his back began to painfully ooze crimson blood.

Camus [ Jin-u.....I.....I..... ]

It was clearly Camus' own fault that Jin-u had received such an injury. As he was torn between the self that was unable to do anything for Jin-u and the self that had his will to fight warped, Camus had fallen into a state of panic.

At this time, Hiiro had approached. As Camus thought that Hiiro would be able to do something, he raised his head.

Baki-!

However, before he had been aware of it, Camus' face was distorted due to a stinging in his cheek, sand heated by daylight entering his mouth. Camus had now understood that he had fallen to the ground. Furthermore, he realized that Hiiro had hit him.

As he slowly got up, Camus simply stared at Hiiro, his eyes opened wide. It was an expression that indicated that he was unable to comprehend why Hiiro had hit him. In the face of such a Camus-

Hiiro [ You're really unsightly, aren't you? ]

Camus [ .....eh? ]

As Hiiro pierced Camus with a chilling glare, he folded his arms and looked down upon him.

Hiiro [ How'd this situation happen? ]

Camus [ ..... ]

Hiiro [ You made your resolve, right? Even so, what's with that shocking display? There are limits to how unsightly one can be. ]

Camus [ H-Hiiro..... ]

In the face of those ruthlessly ejected words, Camus was rendered unable to answer.

Hiiro [ The reason for that Top Knot Bastard's suffering is because of you. The fact that the Desert Monster was able to call for reinforcements, turning this into a pain in the ass is also your fault. Most importantly, the reason why I'm so damned frustrated is also your fault! ]

Hiiro's words, loaded with anger, continued.

Hiiro [ That stinger probably has a neurotoxin, right? A poison that steals away one's ability to move. But if the place it lands is near the heart, it will stop even the heart's beat. The one receiving the attack will die. ]

Camus [ T-that can't be! We have to do something! B-because of me, Jin-u is...! ]

Baki-!

Hiiro hits Camus's face once more.

Hiiro: [ Aa, that's right. All of this is your fault. Incidentally, those from your |Ashura Tribe| who are fighting other monsters may make a mistake and end up receiving a fatal wound. That would be your fault as well. ]

Camus [ Uu... I... I... ]

Camus grinded his teeth as he slowly shed tears once more.

Hiiro [ What is it that you want to do? ]

Camus [ ... Uu... uu... ]

Hiiro [ When you said you wanted to protect everything, was it a lie? ]

Camus [ It was... no lie... ]

Hiiro [ ... You said it, right. That you could smell your father's scent from that monster. ]

With tears still running down his face, Camus turned his eyes to Hiiro.

Hiiro [ Then perhaps a fragment of your father's consciousness continues to dwell in that monster. ]

Camus [ ... -!? ]

Camus took a deep breath as he looked at the monster. He saw the figure of the monster matching blows with Silva, an incredibly angry expression plastered on its face. It definitely didn't seem like the sort of expression his father would make. Still, it was undeniable that the scent of his father, Rigund, emanated from the monster.

Following this, a different scene entered Hiiro's eyes. For a brief moment, upon seeing Camus's tears, the monster's hostility abated. Perhaps it was the sliver of Rigund that continued to dwell within the monster. His response to seeing his son's expression of sorrow.

Hiiro [ Watch closely. ]

Hiiro glared at the monster.

Hiiro [ If that monster's your father, then will you do nothing but cry in his presence? Is that all you can do? ]

Camus [ .....Daddy ]

Hiiro [ Don't mistake what you're showing for kindness. ]

Camus [ ..... ]

Hiiro [ Familial piety. You're thinking of your family. Even when he looks like that, you can't kill your father? ]

Camus silently hung his head. Hiiro took that as a sign of affirmation

Hiiro [ If that's your father, then isn't that all the more reason for you to end this with your own hands? ]

Camus [ My own... hands? ]

Hiiro [ Not hurting your family. That isn't kindness; it's just you acting spoiled. Looking at him now, you know what you have to do. You know what you need to do for your father, don't you? And all you can do is cry? ]

Camus [ I... am... ]

Hiiro [ True kindness only has meaning when you can use it as strength. At the very least, that's what I believe. ]

Camus [ Hiiro... ]

In truth, it was a line he had read in a book once before. However, it was also true that it had left quite an impression on him.

As the two's eyes met, Hiiro slowly opened his mouth.

Hiiro [ Go save him. With no hands other than your own. ]

Camus [ ..... ]

Hiiro [ The one who can truly free him from his suffering is no one but his son. Are you sure that you're just going to watch him without doing anything? ]

Life returned to the pupils of Camus's eyes.

Hihiro [ Or will you let a simple traveler, an uninvolved bystander like me kill him? Your father? It's not like I really care though?. ]

Camus [ ... No. ]

Hihiro [? ]

Camus [ I won't let... you do that. ]

Hihiro [ ... Then what will you do ?]

Camus placed his hand on the fallen Jin-u's shoulder.

Camus [ Jin-u... I'm sorry. But... It'll be alright. ]

As he spoke, Jin-u faintly opened his seemingly heavy eyelids that had been closed until now. A slight smile floated on his face.

Jin-u [ Y...yes... I'll leave... Rigund-sama in your... hands. ]

Camus [ Un. ]

Camus gave a strong nod, and stood up straight. He turned to Hihiro.

Camus [ Take care... of Jin-u. ]

Hihiro [ ...Just go put an end to this already. ]

Camus [ Yeah! ]

Camus started off in the monster's direction. Hihiro moved his eyes towards Jin-u.

Hihiro [ Oi topknot. This is a loan. You'll pay it back later. ]

Jin-u[ ... Ha? ]

Although Jin-u was unable to understand the words that flowed out of Hihiro's mouth, his body was suddenly enveloped in a warm light.

Jin-u ( W-what is this light... it... feels nice... )

It was as if he was resting under a warm sun, experiencing the sensation of a cool breeze massaging his body. It was a sensation that resembled being immersed in a bath, its warmth adjusted to the perfect temperature. As he was overcome by the urge to continue experiencing this phenomenon forever, his eyelids naturally began to gradually descended over his vision.

| Complete Recover | |完治|

By the word Hihiro used, all of the wounds Jin-u sustained began to close themselves. Moreover, Hihiro's magic gently wrapped around Jin-u's body, and a whimsical expression appeared on his face as the power lulled him to sleep.

Hihiro felt some fatigue well up in his body. That one cost quite a bit of MP. He took out an MP Recovery item from his pocket and tossed it into his mouth. He had made it a regular practice to carry them with him just in case.

Hihiro ( Good, now all that's left is that idiot over there. )

# Konjiki no Word Master

---

## Chapter 96

### The Conclusion and Tearful Farewell

---

Camus: 「Jii-chan<sup>(1)</sup>.....stand back. The rest.....I'll take care of it.」

Upon seeing Camus' expression as he rushed towards Silva, Silva released a 「Hohou<sup>(2)</sup>」, as if admiring him.

Silva: 「Apparently, it seems that there will be no problems should I simply leave it to you, yes?」

Camus: 「Nn<sup>(3)</sup>.....you had me worried.」

Silva: 「Nofofofo<sup>(4)</sup>! In which case, I shall bring down the other two. You are fine with me leaving you to take care of the main target, yes?」

Camus shook his head at Silva's proposal.

Camus: 「Uun<sup>(5)</sup>. Everything...I'll do it. So just a bit.....please move away.」

Silva: 「Nofo?」

As Silva tilted his head to the side, he obediently followed Camus' directions, falling slightly behind Camus as he stood, gazing at his back.

Camus intently stared at the Desert Monster.

Camus: 「Sorry...I...didn't know.」

Desert Monster: 「Gururururu<sup>(6)</sup>!」

Further narrowing its sharp eyes, it raised a growl as it seemed to be targeting Camus.

Camus: 「...taking on such an appearance...the one in most pain is...Tou-chan<sup>(7)</sup>, right? That's why...I.」

Saying this, Camus proceeded to take out a single katana. As one would wonder what he was thinking, he applied the blade to his arm. Following this-

\*Tsu-\*(8)

In that state, Camus moved the blade, wounding his own arm. Of course, after the sound of tearing flesh was heard, red blood flowed out of the wound.

\*pota pota pota\*...(9)

Obviously, the blood fell onto the sand near Camus' feet, abiding by the laws of gravity. Camus returned the katana to its original sheath. As Hiiro and Silva were unaware of the reasons behind his conduct, they simply watched over him with blank expressions. However, as they did so, the part of blood-dampened sand near Camus' feet began to gradually spread out.

Camus: 「My blood...has infected it.」

\*Gogogogogogogogogogo!\*(10)

The ground began to faintly shake. It was as if an earthquake had just occurred. Following this, the part of the sand that had become red rose, floating in midair. The amount of sand was equivalent to the size of a single car.

Camus: 「The current me...can only wield this amount of sand, but...」

The sand that had been dyed blood red began to move with a \*uneune\*(11). It gathered above Camus' right hand, which was extended towards the sky. Following this, the sand soared further up towards the sky, the large mass of sand dividing into finer, smaller parts.

As the split parts were just about the size of marbles, the numbers of the sand marbles were so plentiful it would be rather difficult to count them all. The numerous marble sized parts remained floating in the sky.

Camus: 「... Red Idol. .... Here it comes.」

Camus' gaze sharply narrowed.

Camus: 「Model-Rain.」

\*Hyunhyunhyunhyunhyunhyunhyun!\*<sup>(12)</sup>

The cluster of small spheres shot forward with tremendous velocity, their path of flight aimed towards the three monsters. It was almost as if it were red rain.

Desert Monster: 「Giiiiiiiiiiii!?!」

While raising clouds of sand, the cluster of sand spheres mercilessly pierced the bodies of the monsters as if they were bullets.

Hiiro: 「Hou<sup>(13)</sup>.」

Seeing the spectacle, Hiiro released a voice of admiration.

Hiiro: (If I remember correctly, blood itself is magic power. When blood is shed onto the sand, one is able to control the sand as they wish, huh...not bad<sup>(14)</sup>, Nitouryuu.<sup>(15)</sup>)

Although the risk of losing blood was present, it seemed that Camus had gained the ability to freely control the sand to his will as compensation.

As the clouds of sand cleared, there were two dead bodies of monsters that had completely been riddled with holes. Furthermore, one more desert monster seemed to have completely guarded the attack with its tail. As such, although its tail had been completely left in tatters, there was not a single scratch present on its body.

Desert Monster: 「Gururururururu!」

Camus: 「...as I thought, it's hard.」

As Camus appeared to mutter as he said thus, he raised his right arm, directing it towards the sky. As he did so, the red sand that seemed to have sunk into the desert once again gathered towards him.

Camus: 「However...now, the only remaining one is him, uun, it!<sup>(16)</sup>」

Desert Monster: 「Guraaaaaaaaaaaaa-!」

Whether or not it was caused by its anger voltage maxing out, the monster immediately charged towards Camus from its location. As it kicked up the sand, the force of propulsion caused grains of sand to fly into the air.

Camus: 「Model-Wall.」

A red wall was immediately formed<sup>(17)</sup> before Camus' eyes.

\*Dogoo-!\*(18)

Although the monster simply charged into it-

Camus: 「If it's only this much...it won't break.」

It was as Camus' words had indicated, even though it had received a rush from the monster that seemed to contain incredible amounts of destructive power, the red wall did not budge at all.

Camus: 「Model-Knuckle.」

As the sand<sup>(19)</sup> had formed into the shape of a large fist, Camus aimed a punch towards the monster.

Desert Monster: 「Gururaa-!？」

As it had received quite the significant impact, the monster's face distorted as it was launched away. The monster that had charged into the pile of sand staggered to its feet, grinding its teeth with a \*girigiri\*<sup>(20)</sup> as the monster's murderous intent began to swell.

Camus: 「...even this is no good.」

As Hiroyuki was also observing the situation-

Hiiro: (Even though that should have quite a lot of destructive power, it was unable to destroy the sand Camus was wearing, huh.....I guess that means it must be considerably dense.)

Although the red sand seemed to harbor considerable hardness, Camus was still unable to penetrate the monster's armor.

Hiiro: (Now then, what'll you do Nitouryuu?)

Hihiro watched over Camus from a distance. Camus began to once again change the form of his red sand.

As the monster saw this, it also began to similarly manipulate the sand. A large wave of sand assaulted Camus.

Camus: 「...it's pointless.」

\*Byunbyunbyunbyun!\*([21](#))

The red sand began to move while drawing a circle.

Camus: 「Model-Storm<sup>(22)</sup>」

The sand that began to swirl around like a tornado was directed towards the approaching wave of sand.

\*Gigigigigigigigigigigigigigigigi-!\*([23](#))

Both sides collided, grinding together as if they were blades locked in a competition of close quarters. Then-

\*Bushaaaaa-!\*(24)

The side that lost was the wave. Once again, the sand returned to normal as it dispersed. Upon seeing this, Camus solemnly knitted his eyebrows.

Camus: 「...wrong.」

Desert Monster: 「Guru?」

Camus: 「It's wrong. Tou-chan is.....more amazing.....more skilled....more powerful.」

As if he were glaring, Camus directed his line of sight towards the monster with a \*ki-  
\*(25).

Camus: 「You are.....Tou-chan but.....you're not Tou-chan!」

The red sand once again changed shaped above Camus' right hand.

Camus: 「Model-Hammer(26).」

This time, two large sledge hammers were formed. Following this, they headed towards the monster's location with tremendous velocity. One was positioned below, as if it were trying to lift the monster upwards.

Desert Monster: 「Gurua-!？」

As the monster was sent soaring into the skies, what was waiting for it high above was the second sledge hammer. This time, the hammer was swung towards the ground.

\*Bakii-!\*(27)

Of course, the defeated monster fell downwards in such a state. However, in front of it was another sledge hammer. This time, the hammer tried to thrust upwards, similar before.

\*Bokii-!\*([28](#))

As the monster was once again launched skyward, in its path of flight, the other sledgehammer, that was facing the ground, was swung downwards. This was repeated many times.

Desert Monster: 「Gugi-! Gagi-! Ruga-!」

It was almost as if they were playing ping pong. The monster that had just become the ball was violently bounced back and forth between the two hammers. However, because of this-

\*Piki.....Pikiki.....Paki.....\*([29](#))

Fissures began forming throughout the monster's body, the sand gradually being stripped away. In addition, a green fluid began to scatter from the monster's body. This fluid was the monster's blood. The monster's arms bended, its tail was also crushed and destroyed. The fact that its blood began to flow meant that all of the sand that it was enveloped in began to erode away([30](#)).

The sledgehammer looming over high in the sky finally slammed the monster into the ground. As its face distorted in agony, the monster tried to desperately stand as its body trembled.

As Camus took out a pair of katanas from his back, he breathed deeply.

Camus: 「.....I'll end this.....Tou-chan.」

In doing so, perhaps feeling fear from Camus' blood thirst, the monster attempted to escape underground. However-

\*Pishii.....\*([31](#))

The monster was seeking to dig into the sand with both hands, yet, it stiffened upon seeing the ground. The reason for this was because the land that should have contained heat, due to the current location being a desert, was now, for some reason, adrift with cool air. The ground had been converted to ice.

Hiiro: 「Like I'd let you escape.<sup>(32)</sup>」

As Camus was also surprised, he turned towards Hiiro. As he did so, he saw Hiiro crouched down, writing something onto the ground.

「Frost Conversion」 | 『氷結化』

This was the result of using a Three-Word spell for the first time. The result was being able to transform the surface of the nearby desert into a land of ice within an instant. It's effective range seemed to be tremendous. From what one could see, even the place where the 『Ashura Tribe』 were fighting further away seemed to have frozen over.

Although it seemed that everyone was puzzled by the abrupt change in the situation, the one who was actually the most bewildered was Hiiro.

Hiiro: (.....to think that it possessed this amount of effective range. This is certainly a big surprise.)

As expected, the effect did not encompass the entire desert. Even so, compared to the one-word spell's range of four tatami mats, the effective range was quite frightening. Although he had maintained his poker face, the fact that his mind was racing<sup>(33)</sup> remained Hiiro's secret.

Hiiro: 「Now! Finish it, Nitouryuu!」

As it suddenly occurred to him upon hearing Hiiro's words, Camus once again placed strength into his entire body. Following this, Camus rushed towards the monster from that position at full speed.

Desert Monster: 「Guru!？」

The monster rose to its feet, as if in a panic. In the face of the sudden change in the environment, as well as receiving Camus' murderous intent straight ahead, the monster fell into a state of confusion, its body rendered rigid and immobile.

Camus: 「Haaaaaaa-!」

\*Bushuuuuuuu-!\*([34](#))

Desert Monster: 「Guraaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa-!」

The two swords pierced the sphere that was at the monster's core. Camus' face stiffened as he clenched his teeth. As he saw blood flowing out of the mouth of the monster who was imitating his father's face, Camus' expression darkened as he felt the sensation of taking its life.

As he pulled out the pair of katanas, the monster simply fell on its back with a \*dosa\*([35](#)), its waist bent.

Camus: 「Haa haa haa haa haa.....」 ([36](#))

Although it could be said that he had saved everyone from the monster's terror, Camus' face was not coloured with a shade of joy. In contrast, his body was trembling, his head was faced downwards, and he wore a melancholic expression.

Desert Monster: 「Gufu-!」

The monster spat out a large amount of blood. The movement of the monster's core began to calm. At the same time, its sharp, red eyes that was constantly blurred with hostility began to gradually transform into pupils harboring a purple light.

Rigund: 「.....Ca.....mus.....」

As if it were surprised that Camus was able to take action to such extent([37](#)), it widened its eyes. Following this, Camus stared at the sprawled out monster with a feeling of disbelief. The monster only moved its line of sight towards Camus' direction.

Rigund: 「.....Camus」

This time, there could not be any mistake. That voice and those eyes. Without a doubt, they were something that Camus recognized.

Camus: 「Tou.....-chan.....?」

The swords that he held in both hands fell to the ground with a \*dosu-\*([38](#)). Following this, he rushed towards the monster that had fallen to its knees.

Camus: 「Tou-chan!」

Rigund: 「.....Camus.....sorry.」

Camus: 「Uun.....Uun.....Uun!」

Camus shook his head over and over again in denial. From his eyes flowed a large amount of tears.

Rigund: 「But.....you did good, Camus.」

Camus: 「Tou-chan!」

The two people that were close, Hiroyuki and Silva, also approached. Following this, although the two's eyes met and expressed bewilderment, they simply watched over Camus and Rigund silently.

Rigund: 「Sorry.....because of me, you were made to do something this painful.....」

Camus: 「Uun.....Uun! Because I'm the chief.....I will protect my comrades.....Tou-chan is the same! ([39](#))」

Rigund: 「Hahaha.....I see.....you've matured. Huh, Camus.」

Camus: 「T-tou-chan.....」

Rigund: 「You've become.....chief, huh.....ha ha, even in that respect, you are my son.....」

While faintly smiling, Rigund stretched his trembling left hand little by little, placing it on top of Camus' head.

Rigund: 「You've.....become strong, huh.」

Camus: 「Higu.....gusu.....<sup>(40)</sup>」

As Camus snorted<sup>(41)</sup>, a teardrop fell onto the sand.

Rigund: 「Although.....I was mostly unconscious, I felt it. Your strength.」

Camus: 「.....really?」

Rigund: 「Aa, you've become stronger but.....even so, in order to reach my level.....you've got a long way to go.」

Camus; 「.....sorry. It would have been better.....if I released Tou-chan sooner.」

Rigund: 「.....ha ha, I'm really happy<sup>(42)</sup>.」

Camus; 「Tou-chan?」

Rigund: 「Unlike your mother that passed away earlier.....I was able to see your matured figure before my very own eyes.」

Camus' mother passed away from illness soon after she had given birth to him. Ever since then, Rigund decided in his heart to raise Camus into a respectable person. However, as the desert monster incident occurred, Rigund was ultimately only able to raise Camus with his own hands for a short period of a few years. For him, that was something that he should deeply regret.

However, as he was able to see the figure of Camus having become a splendid person-

Rigund: 「This.....should be a good tale to tell them<sup>(43)</sup>.」

The 'them' that Rigund referred to was obviously Camus' deceased mother. Rigund placed strength in his arm as he began to stroke Camus' head.

Rigund: 「Listen Camus.....」

Camus: 「.....w-what is it?」

Rigund: 「The culprit that did this to me was that man.....be careful of 《Scar-face》 .」

Camus: 「 《Scar-face》 .....」

Camus recalled the individual that had assaulted them while riding on top of the Desert Tortoise's shell. That person certainly possessed a cross shaped scar on their cheek.

Rigund: 「That guy.....he said he was testing something.....what he was testing, I have no idea but, it can't be anything good. Yet.....he also said that.....he had no more use for this desert.」

Yet, even so, there was still the possibility that they may come again. Thus, Rigund told Camus to remain cautious.

Camus: 「It's ok.....I will protect.....everyone.」

Upon seeing Camus' expression filled with resolve, Rigund blissfully slackened his cheeks.

Rigund: 「Ha ha, you've still got a long way to go. Your sand manipulation is still - gufu-!<sup>(44)</sup>」

Camus: 「Tou-chan!」

Rigund once again vomited blood as his agony began to show. As his breathing grew rough, his feet began to crumble as if it were made of sand.

Camus: 「Tou-chan! Your feet!？」

Rigund: 「Haa haa haa haa.....listen.....Camus.」

Camus: 「Tou-chan!」

Rigund: 「Listen up.....\*goho goho\*<sup>(45)</sup>! Haa haa haa haa.....become stronger.....go.....surpass me.」

Camus: 「Tou-chan.....un.....un! Un un! I vill.....ged stronger.....I vill, zo.....」 <sup>(46)</sup>

As he discharge a large amount of tears and snot, it was hard to make out what Camus was saying. Yet, Rigund was simply smiling.

Camus: 「I von't loze.....tu anywan.....I von't lose-! Dat'z wai...dat'z waii-!」 <sup>(47)</sup>

The area around Rigund's neck had already turned to sand, dancing in the breeze.

Rigund: 「I'll be watching over you.....my most cherished son.」

Following this, Rigund's entire body returned to the sand.

Camus: 「Dat'z waiiii-! Don't worriiiiiiiiiiii-!」 <sup>(48)</sup>

In this moment, the struggle against the monster of the desert had truly come to an end. Even though it was a conclusion filled with sorrow, Camus had obtained many things from the incident.

As Camus gazed up at the sand dancing in the sky, he strongly tightened his mouth. Although he possessed androgynous features, the expression he was wearing clearly belonged to the face of a man. As he was shouldering what had been entrusted to him by his father, it was the face of a slightly larger individual.

# Konjiki no Word Master

---

## Chapter 97 Rebound of Word Magic

---

Right after Rigund disappeared, Jin-u, who was healed with the word 『Complete Recovery』 | 『完治』, opened his eyes. Camus filled him in on the details. Jin-u ground his teeth as he regretted being unconscious the entire time this was happening.

“That’s how it turned out... but for Rigund-sama to smile in his last moments...” (Jin-u)

“.....Un” (Camus) [‘Un’ – Yes]

Jin-u closed his eyes and looked up, seeming to experience a flood of emotions, after which he exhaled softly.

“Thank goodness. Chief... sorry for causing you trouble.” (Jin-u)

“No. The one who should apologize... is me. Sorry... if I had been ready from the start...” (Camus)

“Chief...” (Jin-u)

“But, there is something that bothers me.” (Camus)

“What is it?” (Jin-u)

“What happened... to your wounds?” (Camus)

“A, aa... About that...” (Jin-u)

At that moment, Jin-u glanced at Hihiro. However, Hihiro simply stood there with his arms crossed and his eyes closed. Jin-u worried whether or not he was allowed to talk about it, however he remembered that he wasn’t specifically told not to.

(Before I lost consciousness Hihiro mentioned a debt, but...) (Jin-u)

After vaguely recalling what happened and looking at Hihiro’s attitude, Jin-u figured he could talk about it.

“Actually...” (Jin-u)

Upon being told that Hihiro was the one who cured Jin-u’s wounds, Camus reflexively drew nearer to Hihiro.

“Hihiro!” (Camus)

“W-what?” (Hiiro)

“I have... a request!” (Camus)

“.....Haa” (Hiiro) [Sigh]

Hiiro had a rough idea of what Camus was going to say.

“Please cure my people!” (Camus)

Hiiro expected it might turn out like this, however, he had already prepared himself for it when he healed Jin-u. Moreover, even if the 『Ashura Tribe』 was able to understand his ability, because of their nature, he did not think they would cause any problems. Besides that, there was also the fact that Camus had become Hiiro’s subordinate and because his subordinate’s tribe were under his jurisdiction as well, he was obligated to help them as well.

However, despite it being a request from his subordinate, Hiiro wouldn’t work for free.

“Haa, I don’t mind healing them, but only on one condition, okay?” (Hiiro)

“Just name it!” (Camus)

Hiiro wanted to tell him to think for a bit before accepting. However, for a man who boasts that he will do anything for the sake of his tribe, it was the obvious answer.

“...Understood. In that case, you must feed me delicious things until I am content. That’s my condition.” (Hiiro)

“Un un!” (Camus)

Camus’ usual blank face turned into a slight smile as he returned a nod in return.

“Ohon! By the way, Hiiro-sama?” (Silva) [‘Ohon’ – cough to get someone’s attention.]

At that moment, Silva called out to Hiiro with a cough.

“What?” (Hiiro)

“For an old man like myself, are these circumstances not slightly harsh?”

Silva was looking at the surroundings while he said that. Speaking of which, Hiiro had completely forgotten about it. Currently the desert all around them was covered in ice. This is the result of using the word 『Frost Conversion』 | 『氷結化』 with the recently unlocked Three Word Chain skill of his 《Word Magic》.

“Now that you mention it, how did this happen?” (Jin-u)

Jin-u tilted his head while shivering from the cold transmitted from the ground.

“This... Hiiro did it.” (Camus)

“...Eh? Chief, is that true? He... did this?” (Jin-u)

Jin-u was watching Hiiro and blinking in surprise but Hiiro ignored him and started to write a word. The word written was 『Origin』 | 『元』 . The word that Hiiro always used to remove the 《Word Magic》 effects of 『Harden』 | 『硬』 and 『Extend』 | 『伸』 .

However, the the word 『Origin』 | 『元』 activated like normal but-

Pachin! [Crack]

The character cracked and disappeared.

“...Nn?” (Hiiro)

Since the word 『Origin』 | 『元』 wasn't effective, Hiiro had his hand on his chin while thinking. But then he felt pain run through his body like an electric current.

Abruptly, Hiiro groaned and fell to his knees, surprising everyone watching. However, this truthfully was not the first time Hiiro had felt this pain.

(A-as I though, it's a 《Rebound》 , huh...) (Hiiro)

This was the 《Rebound》 penalty that 《Word Magic》 incurred if it wasn't properly completed. In order to confirm the effects of the 《Rebound》 , Hiiro had purposefully triggered it in the past. If he tried to cast a spell and the characters or imagined effect were not adequate, the spell would fail like this one, inflicting pain and reducing his MP drastically.

Therefore, Hiiro was not particularly surprised by this. However, he was more concerned about why the spell wasn't effective. After that, Hiiro reassured the other three that he was okay before he began thinking again.

(It doesn't work? No... perhaps it's...) (Hiiro)

Thinking that, Hiiro wrote a word on the ground this time. After he activated it, the frozen ground instantly turned back to desert.

(Hmm, I see.) (Hiiro)

The word he wrote was 『Desert Conversion』 | 『砂漠化』 . Hiiro surveyed the surroundings. Everything seemed to have returned to normal.

(It seems that Three-Word spell effects can only be removed by using another Three-word spell. Well, they do have a lot of power, but...) (Hiiro)

Since even removing the effect cost a lot of MP, Hiiro noted that he better think twice before using Three-Word spells. After all, he had already used 600 MP casting 『Frost Conversion』 | 『氷結化』 and, in order to reverse the effects, he had to use another 600 MP for 『Desert Conversion』 | 『砂漠化』 . Doing this unexpectedly took a total 1200 MP. An ordinary adventurer would be completely exhausted after doing that.

When the area suddenly turned back into desert, everyone was dumbfounded – even Silva. Liliyn's group, who were preventing monsters from passing nearby, also turned up.

However, Liliyn was running at them with great speed.

Dadadadadadadadada! [Footsteps]

Liliyn came up straight to Hiiro and grabbed him by the collar.

“Oi, Kozou! What was that just now!? That was your doing, right!?” (Liliyn)

Apparently, she wanted to know about 『Frost Conversion』 | 『氷結化』 and 『Desert Conversion』 | 『砂漠化』 .

“Fun, I don't really mind answering, but weren't you going to analyze it by yourself?” (Hiiro) [‘Fun’ as sound effect.]

Hiiro showed a malicious expression and said that.

“Mu...Muu.... That's... However...” (Liliyn)

Liliyn mumbled slightly as she remembered that she certainly had declared so herself. Hiiro made Liliyn release her hand from his collar.

“More importantly, what about the monsters?” (Hiiro)

“Ah? Kukuku, those small fries aren't even enough to kill time.” (Liliyn)

“... I thought you said you were not even going to lift a finger?” (Hiiro)

“Mu... Shut up! I couldn't stand watching the others deal with them so slowly so I gave them a hand! That's all it was!” (Liliyn)

Seeing her face dyed red while she was desperately making excuses, Hihiro could only see her as a child.

“Nofofofofo! I’m happy to return to your side, Ojousama!” (Silva)

“Nn? Aa, what... You were still alive, huh.” (Liliyn)

The light sound of a tongue clicking could be heard from Liliyn, but Hihiro thought that it was just his imagination.

“Nofofofofo. That cold attitude is embodiment of Ojousama’s loneliness! It’s wonderful! This unworthy existence, Silva Plutis, will gladly lend my chest to bury the loneliness of my innocent tsundere ojousama. Ojousamaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Silva)

The butler jumped toward Liliyn like a frog. At that, a tremendous killing intent burst from Liliyn.

Pishun!

Liliyn vanished for a moment but then reappeared above Silva, who had been coming at her from above. She grabbed both of his feet and-

Dosun!

“Hauuuuu!?” (Silva)

Liliyn took a big swing with both of her feet and struck Silva’s groin. The men of the 『Ashura Tribe』 who saw that instinctively clenched their thighs together. Silva was completely knocked out, showing the whites of his eyes and drooling from his mouth.

“WHO-ARE-YOU-CALLING TSUNDERE OJOUSAMA!” (Liliyn)

While holding Silva’s legs and crouching on his groin, Liliyn performed a piledriver and planted Silva headfirst in a sand dune. His twitching lower body was the only thing seen above the sand.

(How pitiable... that perverted butler.) (Hihiro)

Hihiro imagined pressing his hands together and silently prayed.

“Feeeeeeee! Silva-samaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Shamoe)

Shamoe was the only one worried about Silva’s safety, but Liliyn came back over while dusting the sand off her clothes and said to her “Leave him, he’s already dead.” Being told that, Shamoe once more cried “Feeeeee!” in surprise.

“S-she’s quite something...” (Jin-u)

“U-un...” (Camus)

“I’m just gonna say this, but don’t lump me together with them.” (Hiiro)

Jin-u and Camus were stunned and muttering, however, Hiiro explained to them that he was completely different from those three. Hiiro wouldn’t be able to stand it if they thought he was like them.

# Konjiki no Word Master

---

## Chapter 98 Food! Ashura Nabe!

---

Upon returning to the Oasis, Sivan and the other's smiles were the first to greet them. Sivan heard the story from Camui, he was wearing a sad expression along the way, but Camui and the others were able to show a smile on their faces due to their safe return.

Afterwards, Hihiro was accompanied by Camui, Sivan and Jin-u to tend to the injured persons gathered at the Yurt.

"Listen up, what I will be doing must be kept secret" (Hihiro)

He gathered magical power in his fingertip

"I will only heal their injuries"

The 3 people nodded affirmatively.

Thus, Hihiro began healing each person. Applying "Complete Recovery" word magic to do so.

Prioritizing the children who are clinging to life. Their Mothers who are nursing them, hugging them tightly began to cry.

And then, not only the mothers but also everyone who was healed were bowing their heads repeatedly in gratitude to Hihiro.

"Rather than doing that, you should honor your promise, Nitouryuu" (Hihiro)

"Yes...I understand" (Camui)

"Hmm? What promise" (Sivan)

"Granpa" (Camui)

"What is it" (Sivan)

"Today we...Feast" (Camui)

"hmm?" (Sivan)

After that it became very busy.

The Ashura tribe's dream of peace was achieved, and to celebrate Camui hurriedly began preparing for a feast.

Near the riverbank, several people were preparing a large pot, it is there that all the ingredients will be placed and cooked.

According to Camui the Ashura Tribe use it to cook whenever there is a celebration or a feast.

Everyone from the tribe gathers around the pot to eat and celebrate.

It was also a time when their dead comrade's soul would be resurrected and be with them at the same time it was an opportunity for the people to get drunk.

The women take charge of ordering the men when cooking. The women yell at the men when they put in the ingredients too early or when their vegetable cutting was sloppy. It was like the men were useless when it comes to preparing food. But in actuality, the job of the men of the Ashura Tribe was normally to hunt or fight or to face danger while the women's job was to provide support. So, for this feast it was really the women that have the upper hand. The men have no choice but to do what the women say.

The stirring of the pot brought forth a nice smell that was carried by the wind that appealed to everyone. It was a strong curry like smell. The smell made their stomachs growl and their mouths drool which made them unable to work. Even Mikazuki was drooling which resembled a waterfall spilling out of her mouth.

“Hey, drooling bird”

“Gui~”

“What do you mean ‘gui’? Do something about your drooling, there is a puddle of drool already on your feet.”

There is a puddle of drool accumulating on Mikazuki's feet, but because Hihiro told her about it she made a slurping sound to contain the drool, only to have it drip all over again.

Seeing this, Hihiro let out a sigh of exasperation.

“.....Hihiro”

The voice was from Camui who was coming closer.

“What is it” (Hihiro)

“About grandpa....thank you”

“Don't worry about it”

Yes, After healing the seriously injured, Hihiro also healed Sivan's injuries as it was a request of Camui. Even though Hihiro thought it was a pain to heal people over and over, he thought better of it.

But Sivan himself refused Hihiro's healing, which surprise both Camui and Jin-u. They didn't understand the reasoning behind it. But Sivan said

"This is a punishment that is etched in my body so that I would never forget."

He was angered by his own inexperience. In truth, he could have stopped Rigund himself. If he had done so, Camui would not have experienced a painful memory. But his right leg was amputated and his eyes went blind. In the end I entrust everything to Camui. He wasn't able to do anything. When its his time to go to the other world, he would think that those were not joyous years. Even though his body could be healed, he cannot move the way he can when he was younger. That is why he cannot forget his current useless self. He thought to himself that he will carry the burden of his punishment until he passes away.

But Camui ignored Sivan's words. He grew up to be who he is now because of Sivan's leadership. He was young when he lost his mother and his father. It was Sivan who guided him to adulthood. He disregards all of Sivan's past mistakes like what he was taught a chief would do. Camui wouldn't forget. Sivan doesn't need those injuries anymore. That is why he wants him to be healed as soon as possible.

Upon hearing those words, Sivan pondered for a moment. If he is to be healed, Camui must fulfill one condition. That his leg would be excluded from being healed.

Pointing to his artificial leg he said his request. Of course Camui protested against this. But this was the condition Sivan has set.

"This stubborn old man" Hihiro said, with Hihiro's magic he can cure his blindness.

Even if his leg were to be brought back, he doesn't have the power to fight like he used to before. But with his eyesight back he could at least see his family. That's why he only wants his eyesight to be healed.

"But...you are stubborn...grandpa"

Camui was able to voice out a complaint.

"That is my wish" (Sivan)

"uuuu" (Camui)

"Just you see"

Children were laughing near the pot where Sivan was at. Of course many were surprised to see his eye sight back, but even so, his family was very grateful that he was able to see again.

“Grandpa looks happy”

Sivan had a smile on his face while he was playing with the children.

“With this...Its fine isn't it?”

“Who knows, But that smiling face isn't bad to look at right?”

“Yes...Hihiro thank you”

Hihiro closed his eyes and crossed his arms. That honest gratitude made his back itch. It wasn't like him, but its not that bad of an experience, he thought.

Hihiro then heard that the pot was done. He opened his eyes, the thing he was waiting for is finally ready. He then hurriedly walked towards the pot. He saw a hot red liquid being poured unto a large leaf being used as a makeshift bowl. It was a stew like food that had many ingredients in it. It even smelled like beef stew.

He placed (tossed) a handful of soup into his mouth.

Even though it looks that way, it wasn't spicy, it had a sweet and spicy taste into it which makes you want to eat more. If partnered with rice, he doubts that he could have stopped eating. As he was thinking this, one of the children came over and offered him a plate with bread on it.

“Oniichan, here, take this”

The child gave it to him with a smile, and everyone around was watching them. The other guys were eating the bread along with the soup, like a fondue.

Hihiro also imitated them on how they eat.

“Oh?”

The moment he ate it, he instantly remembered. It was “Naan” (TL: unleavened bread) It was unmistakably curry with naan bread. Hihiro then proceeded to eat it vigorously.

“Hehehe, is it delicious?”

“Yeah..”

It was another child's face that showed up. This was one of the children that Hihiro healed. He came along side what it seems to be his mother.

“A, Mom! Oniichan said it was delicious!”

“Oh? That’s great!”

The child replied with a smile.

“I really am truly grateful” (Mother)

In the Yurt he was thanked more than enough, they still couldn’t stop thanking him, Hihiro thought.

However he doesn’t feel that it was a bad thing.

“Don’t worry about it, by the way this Naan...no , this bread, what is it?”

“Oh, that is a fruit” (TL: nut;fruit;berry)

As she was saying this, she points to a tree. A palm tree from what it looks like. It was bearing fruits the size of volleyballs.

“That fruit needs to be heated at the right temperature for it to be soft like this, it is our staple food here.”

“I see”

“But in the soup there are (リモーネ rough translation: rimo-ne/lemon???), <green-crab’s meat>. <Torori shellfish> ,”

I see, Hihiro thought, so that must explain why I was able to taste a lemon like flavor in the soup. That was why it had that sour taste. That explains why there is a green crab meat in here. It was fun chewing the crab meat, wherein the taste spreads in your mouth. The in it was very very soft. It had that red coloring in it though when cooked, the red color dissolves into the stew and becomes white meat, it was the reason why the stew had that red color.

To top it all off the torori shellfish gives off the sweet and spicy flavor to the stew when cooked and mixed together with the other ingredients.

I didn’t see any other ingredients aside from vegetables but over all this soup was very well made. I didn’t even notice that I already had 5 servings of it.

As the mother and child’s explanation was over, they bowed and went off somewhere. It was then when Lilyn was walking towards me with a grin on her face.

# Konjiki no Word Master

---

## Chapter 99 Food! Ashura Nabe!

---

Liliyn: [You're too soft towards children, aren't you? ]

Hiiro: [ Who knows. ]

Since it seemed like the discussion would drag on were he to react, Hiiro gave a half-hearted reply.

Liliyn: [ Nevertheless, Hiiro. ]

Hiiro: [.....]

Liliyn: [ Your || Word Magic || seems to be quite an amusing type of magic. ]

Apparently, this seems to be the main topic of the conversation.

Liliyn: [I was allowed this time to observe it for a long time on the way]

According to her, the Desert Monster had continued to call for reinforcements halfway through the battle. As Hiiro had left Camus to take over the fighting, Liliyn lost interest as she began to kill the swarms of monsters in an attempt to kill time.

But then, she was shocked when the ground changed to ice.

Liliyn: [ To think that you possessed that much amount of power, Honestly, it makes me more and more interested in you, you know that? kukuku ]

Hiiro: [Hmph! Still, wouldn't you agree your magic is something similar?]

As he was annoyed by the fact that she constantly kept pestering him with such notions, Hiiro began to retaliate with his own counterattack.

Liliyn: [ Nn? What do you mean by that?]

Hiiro: [ Don't play dumb, You must have noticed by now right? My magic is versatile. It is even capable of examining the information of the target. ]

Liliyn: [ ..... ]

She remained smiling silently.

Hiiro: [ Your magic ....what I saw from before when you dealt with Baron Bone Lizard, those huge spikes were not your magic ]

Liliyn: [ .....hou ]

Hiiro confirmed it by the glint in her eyes.

Hiiro: [ Do I have to say it clearly? Your magic is a unique magic .... the name is called  
| Fantasia Magic | ]

Then, he saw her tremble for the first time. Though her eyebrows twitched, as to be expected, her perpetual smile did not change.

Liliyn: [ ..... kukuku, somehow or other, it appears that you are more outrageous than I had imagined. ]

Hiiro: [ Right back at you.]

As a matter of fact, Liliyn already had a rough idea of how Hiiro's magic functioned. She anticipated that her magic's true nature might be discovered by Hiiro. Despite this, her heart stopped from Hiiro guessing it effortlessly.

Liliyn: ( He's interesting.... He's really Interesting!, Besides, I don't know whether or not this brat has noticed it, but apparently, he has a predisposition for getting drawn into problems easily. Kukuku, if I stay near this brat, I might be able to have an experience that's far more interesting than the boredom I've had to deal with.)

She chuckles at Hiiro's extremely rare disposition. She was convinced that more interesting things would happen after this.

After that, as they continued to glare at each other, Silva suddenly appeared and changed the atmosphere.

Silva: [ Nofofofofo! You seem to be having fun Hiiro~sama! nofofofofo! ]

Silva was unusually excited. Although Hiiro watched Silva with an annoyed expression, upon seeing the wooden cup in his hand, Hiiro began to speak.

Hiiro: [Oi, don't tell me that's alcohol?]

Silva: [ Nofofofofofo! Ye~s that is righ~t! It has qui~te a good flavour! ]

Gulping sounds were heard as he drunk the alcohol.

Silva: [ \*puhaa~, this is irresistable~! ]

Shamoe: [ feeeeeeeee! Don't drink too much, Silva-sama~! ]

While Silva was dancing in ecstasy from the alcohol, Shamoe was frantically trying to stop him, yelling in a desperate voice. However, as this had hardly any effect at all, she was on the verge of tears.

Shamoe: [ U..u.uuu.. As I thought, Shamoe really can't do anything. I really am a Hopeless Maid .... \*sniff ]

Liliyn also had a strange tension about her. Then he took a close look at her, and she also had a cup in her hands. Apparently, she seems to have been drinking as well.

Liliyn: [ Yea, this is really quite delicious ]

Liliyn, who had the wooden cup before anyone was even aware, drank in a similar manner.

Liliyn: [ Hey, how about you? ]

Hiiro: [ Don't need it. I'm not interested in alcohol ]

Liliyn: [ humph, the gaki-bastard isn't? To think you cannot drink this amount of alcohol, what a boring guy. ]

Hiiro: [What was that?]

There was a vein popping out of his head.

Liliyn: [ You won't drink my alcohol.. aa~ iyada-iyada . There is someone here who does not understand how delicious this alcohol is,... well for a brat like you, I guess milk is preferable ]

As she began to leave after saying those words, Hiiro firmly grabbed Liliyn's arm.

Liliyn: [ mu? ]

Hiiro: [ Are you underestimating me? It doesn't mean that I cannot drink alcohol, I'm just not interested in it. ]

Hiiro forcefully took the wooden cup from her hands and drank it with great intensity.

Liliyn: [ O..Oi, that is... ] [1]

Liliyn seemed to be agitated by this situation, though Hiiro did not pay any attention to her.

Hiiro: [ puhaa~ how about that!?!]

Hihiro looked a little displeased. Although he had been boasting awhile ago, he did not actually understand anything about alcohol. He just poured it straight down his throat without tasting it.

However, in contrast to Hihiro, Liliyn was blushing as she glanced back and forth between the cup and Hihiro's mouth. [2]

Hihiro: [ uh? What's wrong Aka-Loli ? ]

Liliyn: [ It... it's nothing! ]

After she had said that, Liliyn took the cup from Hihiro and left.

Hihiro: [ ..... what's with her...? ]

Hihiro tilted his head, not really understanding what had just occurred.

A little ways away, Liliyn was motionlessly staring at the cup she was holding with both hands.

Liliyn: [ N...No, though I do not have to worry about this insignificant little thing. But why does he not respond to this? Is he accustomed to it? No, no, to begin with, he doesn't care about this, still..... ][3]

Her face was dyed a gentle shade of red while she traced where his lips had been with the tip of her finger.

Silva: [ Onyaa~, O~jou~sama~! What seems to be the problem? ]

The butler who couldn't read the atmosphere showed up. He was grinding his teeth and his shoulders were shaking. He, the drunken butler who couldn't read the atmosphere, thrust out his mouth similar to giving a kiss.

Silva: [O~jou~sama, this butler will, without fail, embrace you and kiss your lovely mouth~]

Steam came out of Liliyn's head when she heard the word "kiss". Then, his lips that reeked of alcohol gradually approached hers. Seeing that, a vein appeared on her head.

Liliyn: [ hohou.... Do you want to kiss that much? ]

Silva: [ \*muchuu~ ]

Liliyn: [ Then, to your heart's content! ]

Liliyn embraced Silva with her small body. [4]

Silva: [ O, oooo~! Thi... This is quite assertive! ]

However, for some odd reason, his body was somehow floating in the air.

Silva: [ nofo? ]

And while in that position, the ground approached with a terrible speed. No, it was his very own body that was approaching the ground.

Silva: [no, nofuooooooooooooooooo bugh!? ]

As it happened, Silva's face pierced the ground, silence enveloping the surroundings. Liliyn looked down on the body of Silva with her arms folded.

Liliyn: [ Just die in the ground already ]

The |Ashura Tribe| were dumbfounded when they saw the situation. The children who saw Silva's body stuck in the ground found it amusing and began to poke his body.

Hiiro: (What are those guys doing....)

Hiiro seems to have been amazed at the situation and let out a sigh.

Hiiro: (And, this fellow...)

When Hiiro glanced to the side, what he witnessed was Shamoe, breathing deeply while sleeping with an adorable expression on her face.

Hiiro: (haa, they're all the same as always)

As if troubled, Hiiro placed his fingertips onto his temples and shut his eyes. Still, he noticed a warmth spreading throughout his body, most likely caused by the alcohol. As the day ended a pleasantly cool breeze began to flow, resulting in a nice feeling. Thus, he thought that such a day was not so bad as he admiringly gazed at the night sky.

The next day, Hiiro and his companions decided to continue traveling because they can finally cross the desert. However, those who expressed their misgivings about the situation were Camus and the children.

Camus: [Hiiro... Let's be together.][5]

Hiiro: [ Impossible, There are things I have to do. ]

Camus: [ ... I heard about it yesterday. You're traveling the world. ]

Hiiro: [ That's right.]

Kid 1: [ Who cares about it! You get to live with us! ]

Kid 2 : [ Right, Right! ]

Kid 3: [ Don' t go Hero! ].

Before he had noticed, Hihiro's name seemed to have spread. Ever since yesterday the children have been happily shouting 'hero'.

Camus: [I also want to go.... But I..]

Hihiro: [ You're right, you'll protect your tribe right? ]

Camus: [... Un.... However.... I'm Hihiro's subordinate. ]

He looked down solemnly as he said that. Everyone understood how greatly he wanted to be with Hihiro.

Hihiro: [ Nitouryuu ]

Camus: [ What? ]

Hihiro: [ If we meet again and you have become stronger, then I will call you by your name.]

Taken backed, he suddenly looks up at Hihiro

Camus: [ Really!? ]

Hihiro: [ Ah, yes, so do the things that you need to do. ]

Camus: [ .... Un! I....We were saved by all of you. Therefore... This favor... I will return it someday... Surely... Without fail! ]

Hihiro: [Well then I shall wait without any expectations. ]

Hihiro's cheeks slackened slightly as he spoke.

Following this, Sivan opened his mouth to speak to Liliyn.

Sivan: [Liliyn, although I'm not worried about you, it appears the ambitions you spoke of before have yet to be realized]

Liliyn [Humph, I'll realize them eventually ]

Sivan: [ hohoho , when that time comes, by all means, I will lend you my power. ~nou]

Liliyn: [ .... That's natural. Since the old days, you've owed me for many things. ]

Sivan: [That's true.....be in good health. ]

Liliyn: [Don't go and become cowardly, alright?]

Sivan: [ Like you can talk, Loli-baba. ]

Liliyn: [ Shut up, you Damn Serious-jiji. ]

As they said thus, they both directed a smile at the other. This might be their way of saying their farewells. Following this, Hihiro mounted Mikazuki.

Camus: [ Hihiro.... ]

Hihiro: [ What? ]

Camus: [ When you get into trouble ..... I will come running to your aid. ]

Hihiro: [ ..... Later ]

Camus: [..... Un! ]

Camus' expressionless face changed to a smile. The children by his side were also smiling as they expressed their gratitude. Naturally, the others did as well. Together, they all sent off their tribe's benefactors.

Hihiro: [Let's go.]

Mikazuki: [Kui!]

Liliyn: [ Farewell, Sivan ]

Silva: [ nofofofofo! Those were wonderful people! ]

Shamoe: [F-f-f-farewell to all of you!]

Thus, the four departed from the |Ashura Tribe's| village. Following this, Camus and the others waved until their backs disappeared beyond the horizon.

Camus' Perspective

Sivan: [ They left already?]

Camus: [ n..... ]

Camus' expression had a small trace of loneliness, it was the face of a man hiding a certain determination. Following this, he turned around to face everyone.

Camus: [ Everyone! Let's go report everything.... to the |Grave Tower|! ]

Thereupon, everyone raised their voices in strong agreement. They wanted to tell their wonderful experiences to the companions who were resting at the |Grave Tower|, yet, the true reason for the visit was because they wanted to let them see the growth of the Chief of their tribe. In addition, they needed to make a new grave for Rigund, Camus' father.

Peace returned to the desert, although there were still monsters that naturally wandered the sands. So as not to lose to the monsters, Camus decided to work harder for the sake of prolonging the |Ashura Tribe's| prosperity.

Camus Monologue

I'm also greedy like Hiiro. I've determined again that I will defend everything as long as these hands reach them. And I look forward to becoming even more powerful so that Hiiro will call me by name when we meet again.

I will proudly meet my friend someday [6]